

**DUE DATE SLIP****GOVT. COLLEGE, LIBRARY****KOTA (Raj )**

Students can retain library books only for two weeks at the most

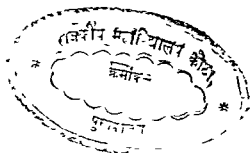
BORROWER S No	DUE DTATE	SIGNATURE

## THE TYPES OF SANSKRIT DRAMA

# THE TYPES OF SANSKRIT DRAMA

With a Foreword by Dr S K De, M A, D Litt. (Lon.)

BY  
D R MANKAD



1936

URMI PRAKASHAN MANDIR  
DEANSO HALL, KARACHI

Printed at  
**PRABHAT PRESS**  
Denso Hall,  
Karachi

पितरौ वन्दे



देवानामिदमामनन्ति मुनयः कान्तः कर्तुं चाक्षुषः  
रुद्रेणेदमुमाकृतव्यातिकरे स्वागे विभक्तः द्विधा ।  
त्रैगुण्योद्भूतमत्र लोकचरितं नानारसं दृश्यते  
नाटयः भिन्नरुचेर्जनस्य बहुधाप्येकं समाराधानम् ॥

## FOREWORD

It gives me great pleasure to have this opportunity of expressing my appreciation of the work of my young friend Mr D. R. Mankad, -who is already known as the author of several admirable papers on Sanskrit dramatic theory and practice and recommending it to all students of Sanskrit literature

Sanskrit Dramaturgy is one of the many subjects which still await general as well as special investigation. The allied subject of Sanskrit Poetics has just begun to be systematically studied, but Dramaturgy and Histrionic Art are subjects which are still practically unexplored. As most of the original texts were still unknown, uncertain or unavailable, very few scholars have hitherto seriously ventured to undertake a critical enquiry. In popular books published in India and abroad on the other hand some wild theories have occasionally been set forth without the slightest justification. Now that sufficient materials are available, it is necessary to make a deeper and more accurate study and we can for this reason, heartily welcome the fruits of Mr Mankad's labours presented in the following pages.

There can hardly be any doubt that the subject itself with a literature going back to several centuries is deserving of careful and detailed study. It is not Mr Mankad's ambition to write an exhaustive account or to make a comparative study, but he limits himself to the modest object of examining critically the Sanskrit-dramatic theory which directed the evolution of the different dramatic types and controlled their technique. He has been able to bring together an amount of material from an intensive study of the dramatic aturgie as well as dramatic texts, and whatever judgment may be passed on the conclusions he has drawn, the documentary value of his work can hardly be overrated. He has wisely eschewed the more tempting course of producing an

imposing work, containing bird's eye views or sweeping generalisations' on the basis of meagre and generally unreliable facts and opinions. He realises that on the pioneer investigator in this comparatively little known field falls the more humble but more important duty of a patient and conscientious collection of first hand facts which are indeed the links without which the chain of historical summary or even of any kind of generalisation cannot be properly forged. In the present state of our knowledge it is not expected that all the difficulties and obscurities will be solved with absolute certainty or that all scholars will agree with every statement made, but the young author with the judgment and insight of more mature years has expressed very lucidly what he has to say and has exhibited not only a thorough familiarity with theory but also a complete mastery of details, controlled and ordered by the sobriety of true scholarship. It will be a source of satisfaction if his little book, as one of the pioneer contributions on a difficult and complicated problem, is able to draw the attention of interested scholars and further stimulate research in an almost untrodden field.

University of Dacca  
22 1936

S. K. Das



## PREFACE

After the modern revival of Sanskrit studies Sanskrit plays are widely read and studied but the study of Sanskrit Dramatic theory has been most sadly neglected. A detailed and critical study of Sanskrit Dramaturgy in all its branches is a desideratum. With a view to meet with this want to some extent, I have undertaken the publication of this small volume.

In the following pages I have attempted to ascertain the nature of the types of Sanskrit Drama (सङ्घट्ट as well as सङ्घट्ट) in their origin and development. The subject being entirely such as has not been studied in modern days I have given full information from the original Sanskrit dramaturgical works. Incidentally I have ventured to discuss certain problems connected with the subject but the conclusions drawn are mere suggestions. And I shall consider myself more than amply rewarded for my labours if they will stimulate further critical study in this direction. This forms only one chapter in the vast study of the Sanskrit Dramatic theory.

I am extremely grateful to Dr S. K. De of the Dacca University for writing the Foreword to the present work and for encouraging me in these studies. I am also thankful to Prof B. K. Talore and Prof. K. H. Dhruva both of whom have made valuable suggestions during the course of my studies.

Department of Sanskrit,  
D. J. Sind College Karachi

10-4-36



## ABBREVIATIONS

[Following is the list of abbreviations used for the works, more frequently quoted during the course of this work]

NS = नाट्यशास्त्र Nir Press

AP = अग्निपुराण (c 825 AD) Anandasrama S

Abh = अभिनवभारती (c 975-1015) GOS

DR = दशरूप (c 974-995) ed. by Haas 1912

SP = शृङ्गारप्रकाश (c 1050-1100) as qd in BP-Intro

KS = काव्यानुशासन (c 1084-1173) Nir Press

ND = नाट्यदर्पण (1093-1175) GOS

BP = भावप्रकाशन (c 1175-1250) GOS

PR = प्रतापहरि (c. 1275-1325) ed by K P Trivedi

RS = रसार्णवमुधाकर (c 1330) Trivandrum S S

SD = साहित्यदर्पण (c 1300-40) ed by Kane, 1923

App E

Mtr = मातृगुप्त as quoted by राघवभट्ट on शकुन्तल

Nir Press

SR = समीतिरत्नाकर ASS

NSD = नाट्यमर्मस्वरीविका A Ms in B O R I

RK = रसकौमुदी

" "

BSG = भरतशास्त्रप्रम्य

" "

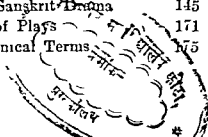
BA = भक्तार्णव

" "

SDK = सिद्धान्तकौमुदी

## CONTENTS

Cha	
I	Introductory 1
	वृत्त, वृत्त्य and नट्य—Roots वृत् and नट—their senses examined—these three terms—their uses and senses
II	Rūpaka 25
	नाट्य and रूपक
III	Rupaka (contd) 37
	Species of रूपक (general)—Species of रूपक (individual)—नाटक, प्रकरण, समवकार, दिन, ईदाम्बुग, व्यासोग, भद्र, प्रहसन, वीथी, माग
IV	Evolution of Rūpakas 74
V	Derivative Types 89
	नाटिका, प्रहरणी, तोटक, सटक
VI	Nrtya-types (Upaparūpakas) 79
	Species of वृत्त्य types (general)—Species of वृत्त्य types (individual)— माग, मागिका, होम्नी, रासक, नाट्यरासक, नर्तनक, प्रेक्षाक, हजेस, उल्लोप्यक, काव्य, परिजातक, सङ्गपक, चित्रक, गोष्ठी, कल्पवृक्ष, श्रीगदिनम्, दिग्गक, दुर्नलिका, or मत्तलिका, or दुर्नलित, मञ्जिष्ट विलम्बिका, रामाकीड and प्रेरण
VII	Evolution of Nrtya-types 129
	Note A—On रास and रासक 141
	Note B—On रासक and रूपक 143
VIII	The Origin of Sanskrit Drama 145
	Appendix I List of Plays 171
	Appendix II Technical Terms 175
	Indices



CHAPTER I  
*INTRODUCTORY*



## CHAPTER I INTRODUCTORY

A general study of the extant Sanskrit dramas leaves an impression that our Drama was, as it were, still-born. It would seem that from the earliest plays of मनु and बलिदास to the latest dramas of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, there has been very little advance in its technique. The earliest drama known, already shows a form, which was crystalised in its structure and even in its theme.<sup>1</sup> Sanskrit dramatists, as it were, lacked in imagination and experimentation. There does not appear to have been any bold departure from the standard drama, as far as its technique goes. Nay more, even the theory, as fixed by भरत's नाट्य-शास्त्र, as early as बलिदास or most probably earlier than his age, presupposes a type of drama which has been truly represented by our extant dramas. Thus our earliest dramas and our earliest theory of Dramatics, both show a form of drama which was fully developed and on which there has been very little advance.

Why is this so? Can we reasonably believe in such a state of things? We shall try to answer these questions during the course of this

1 Even *नट्यशास्त्र* the work published under the name of भरत and which appears to be h.s., shows all the technical details as prescribed in the theory known to us. The *भङ्गी*, the *प्रसङ्गना*, the *मर्द*, the *वस्त्र*s and the set style of the theme—all are in perfect harmony with the theory.

little volume, but for the present, we shall have to collect data for the purpose. In order to understand the essential nature of our drama, it is necessary that we should undertake a detailed study of all the types of drama as represented in practice and theory. Fortunately for us, a work of encyclopaedic nature on this subject, has recently been brought to light and published in the Gaekwad Oriental Series, under the title of भावराशानम्. Though this work belongs to a very late period and though its text, as available, is almost a confused mass of inaccuracy, a careful study of the work helps us in formulating certain broad ideas as to the gradual development of our Drama. I shall, therefore, undertake a detailed study of the various types of Sanskrit Drama as described in our extant dramaturgical texts.

Our dramaturgists have, it seems, very early, distinguished between the art of histrionics (नाट्य) and the art of dancing (नृत्य or नृत्त), and as some of the types of our Drama are based on नृत्य and others on नाट्य, it becomes essential for us to understand clearly these terms, before we study the forms of Drama themselves.

### 1 नृत्त, नृत्य and नाट्य

These three terms are very often explained in the works on Sanskrit Dramaturgy, but there is a divergence of opinion as regards the sense attached to them. नृत्त and नृत्य are usually derived from the root नृ, while नाट्य is derived from the

root नद्<sup>2</sup>. If we can ascertain the distinctions, if any, between these two roots, it will be easier for us to arrive at the exact senses of the above three terms

नृत् and नद्

Chronologically, the usage in literature shows नृत् to be an earlier root, yet there is a difference of opinion about the origin of these two roots. It was Weber<sup>3</sup>, who first pointed out that नद् is a prakritisation of नृत्. There is also a view<sup>4</sup>, which takes नृत् to be a sanskritised root from नद्, which according to them, would be the

2 गमचन्द्र in his ND advances another view (P 23)

नाटकमिति नाटयति द्विविधं राजनप्रवेष्टोऽन सभ्यानां हृदयं नर्तयतीति नाटयन् ।  
अभिनवगुप्तस्य मननार्थेभ्यामिति ननेर्नाटकशब्दं व्युत्पन्नमिति तत्र नु यदापित्वेन हृदयमावृज्जित्य ।  
यद्यपि कथाशेषोपि श्रोतृहृदयं नाटयन्ति तथाप्येकोपायादीनां वैशिष्ट्यदेवैव नाममात्रात् न तथा  
राजकत्वमिति न ते नाटयन् ।

This view if correct, may lead us to derive नाटय from नाट् and so नद् will have no place in the evolution of नाटय. But there are other considerations which militate against taking नद् as the root for नाटय or नाटक. Most probably with ND's sole exception there is no other attempt known to derive नाटय from नाट्. For lengthening of the vowel there is the grammarian's sanction, as the roots with penultimate short vowel do so in forming Potential Participles. But apart from that, there is the sanction of ण्विनि (IV, 3, 129) in deriving नाटय from नाट्. Compare also the following (NSD (कोटक))

नाटयन्नेन नटनं नाटयानिर्दिष्टम्

नाटय चर्त्त नाटयः ।

On the whole, then it seems correct to connect नाटय with नाट्

3 A History of Indian Literature, Weber, 3rd edition P 197

4 This view was expressed in the leading Gujarati monthly journal March and May 1931

original root. But both these views seem to be erroneous (that is, if the votaries of the first view take नृ to be an original Prakrit root). नृ is not a Prakrit root at all, for it is not used in that form anywhere in the Prakrit Literature. Prakrit lexicons only show the root नृ, not नृ, which fact alone is enough to show that नृ was never regarded as a Prakrit root. There are forms like नृ seen in Prakrit Literature<sup>5</sup> but a root like नृ would only yield नृ. Thus, as far as the evidence of actual usage goes, नृ cannot be taken as a Prakrit root. Nor is the second view correct, according to which, नृ would be a root later than नृ. Here again the actual usage falsifies any such theory, नृ is seen in ऋवेद<sup>6</sup> itself, while the earliest usage of नृ is met with in णिनि<sup>7</sup>, proving नृ to be an earlier root. It is true that much is to be taken for granted in calling नृ a later root, simply because its usage is not seen earlier. One may argue that it might have been used in spoken language only. But the continuous absence of this word in all the earlier literature, makes it probable that it was a later root. And this appears to be quite reasonable. Both नृ and नृ are used in Sanskrit

5 I am indebted for this information to Pandit Becharadas who is an erudite Prakrit Scholar and who was a Professor at Gujarat Vidyapith, at Ahmadabad. But it is possible that this नृ is a reflection of Prakrit equivalents of नृ like नृ etc.

6 RV X 18 3 X 29 2 VIII 37 7, VIII, 81, 3 VIII, 24, 9 I 130 7 etc.

7 IV, 3 110 111

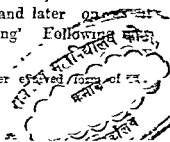


Literature<sup>8</sup> and though there may have been some confusion in the usage of these roots at first, it seems quite likely that they soon came to denote two different concepts. *नृ* indicated a particular form of entertainment. But as this form of entertainment developed and incorporated new features into it, it became necessary to find out a word which would indicate this newly developed form of entertainment. So *नृ* came to denote a form of entertainment which had developed from the form of entertainment indicated by the root *नृ* and which for that same reason was necessarily later. Thus too *नृ* seems to be an earlier root. According to this reasoning, *नृ* will have the sense of dancing and *नृ* that of acting.

Now it will be seen that at the time when *नृ* was given a sense different from that of *नृ* (and this must have happened when *नृ* was accepted as a Sanskrit root, even if it be taken as a Prakrit root at first), the two forms of entertainment, arising from the same action, had been permanently separated and had gained their individual traits. *नृ*, which is distinct from *नृ* (as we shall presently see), must have come into existence just before the root *नृ* was distinguished from *नृ*. It is probable, that the root *नृ* first meant 'to dance' and later, *नृ* developed, came to mean 'acting'. Following *नृ*, support such a view<sup>9</sup>.

8 It is possible that *नृ* is a further evolved form of *नृ*.

9 SDK P 196



नट नृत्तौ । इत्यमेन पूर्वमपि पठितम् । तत्राय मिवेव ।

पूर्व पठितस्य नाट्यमर्थः । यत्कारिषु नटव्यपदेशः ।

Thus it may seem that नट् had both these senses and it would be quite natural to suppose that the earlier sense was 'dancing' and as it developed it came to mean 'acting'. It should also be remembered that in पाणिनि, नट्, नट, and नाट्य—all the three terms are seen, and this may show a definite development of the word नट्, as distinguished from नृत्, for even in the above passage from SDK, नाट्य has been assigned the sense of 'acting' not of 'dancing'.

But, just as नट् is found to have been used in both the senses, नाट्य, too, has been assigned both these senses in certain works. In the prelude to a work called नाट्यसर्वस्वटीविका, a ms in possession of the Govt Oriental Library at B O R I, the following is found (fol 10\*)<sup>10</sup>

भरता बहुधा सन्ति नान्दिसारस्वदादयः  
तपो प्रमाणमादिञ्च भरतस्त उमावति  
अत एवादिभरतप्रफर गटन स्मृतम्  
गाटकास्तु कशाप्राया दशरूपकमङ्गल  
शैल्यसूत्रधाराद्यै पुत्तिकाप्रतिमादिभि  
वेशभागाविकारादिकल्पनाभिर्निर्दृष्ट  
तस्मादप्युक्तस्य नृत्तस्य प्रमाणं न भवन्ति ते

10 For a discussion about the identity of this ms., see my paper on नाट्यसर्वस्वटीविका, in the *Annals of B O R I*, Vol. XIII No 11, P 173 ff. Also cf. The same, Vol. XV, Parts I II, P 89 ff. I am indebted to the Curator for the use of the ms.

नटन नाटिकानां च तेषां करणमेव हि

तस्मान्नाट्यस्य शुद्धात्, शान्तसिद्धे' प्रवक्ष्यति

This shows that according to this work नाट्य was not the same as रूपक. It was mere वृत्त or वृत्त्य and this is amply corroborated by the definitions of the 37 types of नाट्य as given in this work. Further, in this work the author takes an opportunity of deriving the words नाट्य and वृत्त्य (fol. 28), wherein he describes नाट्य as the art of नट्, and then includes under it ताण्ड्य, नर्तन and हास्य. This classification is evidently based on some sort of differentiation between नाट्य and नर्तन, and in the light of the above passage, it being impossible to understand नाट्य in the sense of drama, it must have the sense of वृत्त्य as understood by DR and others.

Thus नाट्य seems to have been used in the sense of वृत्त्य and नाट्य and perhaps of वृत्त. That it had both these senses is also seen in मातृविद्यमिनित्रम्. It mentions a नाट्य called उल्लिखित or चलित which was properly acted by मातृविद्य. The character of चलित as described in the drama was that of वृत्त्य it was certainly not a drama, nor was it a mere वृत्त type. As there is the express mention यथारसनमिनयति after the stanza recited by मातृविद्य, it is obvious that it was a type which involved अभिनय and this was the technical nature of वृत्त्य<sup>11</sup> नाट्य, thus, here refers

11 It seems that मातृविद्य recognised the principle that मन्त्र was at the root of वृत्त्य. The fact that he calls the two चान्दोर्ग मन्त्राः incarnate suggests it. Thus also वृत्त्य was a वृत्त्य type.

to नृत्य<sup>12</sup> Same is the nature of नाट्य as used in NSD मालविकाग्निमित्रम् knows नाट्य in the sense of drama also गणदास eulogises नाट्य thus (I, 4)<sup>13</sup>

देवागमिदमामनन्ति मुनयः शान्तं कृतं चाक्षुषं  
रुद्रेणैवमुमावृतव्यतिकरे स्वाद्रे विभक्तं द्विधा ।  
त्रैगुण्याद्भवमत्र लोकचरितं नानारसं दृश्यते  
नाट्यं भिन्नहर्षजनस्य बहुधाप्येकं समाराधनम् ॥

This stanza characterises नाट्य as one where लोकचरितं is seen, which would, necessarily refer to drama proper, rather than to an ordinary नृत्यप्रकार<sup>14</sup>

- 12 Following note by Prof B K Thakore will be interesting पञ्चाङ्गाभिनय and चरित are distinguished by जगन्नाथ Former is acting on the stage by the fully trained नट complete in all respects It is highest proficiency in this many sided art चरित is the penultimate step, only after it is mastered can the pupil be taught the former In चरित नृत्य including (and enhancing the effects of) संगीत is performed as by a mere नर्तकी, then अभिनय by itself (without नृत्य or संगीत) as by a नर्तक For चरित then, it is essential that (a) the passage to be performed must be short (b) yet should embody several ras and avasthas in a sequence that is natural or at least possible (c) that the 2nd half of the performance (i e अभिनय or नाट्य proper) should be exhibited immediately after the first half, and that (d) the श्रोतार्य or प्राञ्जल judges this 2nd half in relation to what he has just seen and heard चरित, therefore (and a fortiori the earlier stages also) is purely a school room exercise not a kind of public performance on the stage in any sense

13 cf NS I, 78

14 Following note, too by Prof B K Thakore is worth quoting This stanza covers the whole gamut (a) रस the merely physical movements (including appropriate expression and

All this shows that नट as well as नाट्य was, at one time or the other, used in both the senses of acting and dancing. But this should not be difficult to explain. Our earlier analysis of नट being used for a form of entertainment distinct from the one represented by नृत्त, would lead us to believe that almost as early as the root नट came into existence, a distinct sense was given to it. However, it is quite possible that in the beginning, there must have been a confusion in the use of both these roots नृत्त and नट, one being very often used for the other. And the theorists would recognise the distinction only after the sense had been fully crystallised in the popular usage. Thus the fact that we do have usages showing both the senses

movements of eye eye-brow face hands shoulders breasts hips and of course also the feet and their toes)

(b) नृत्त—the above plus recitation or singing without any flaw or impropriety in tune with and in full accord with the sense of the words

(c) नाट्यनिरूप—the above (a) or (a+b) plus acting proper. Where not wanted, or inappropriate नट or नर्तन or both would be dropped

It also distinguishes between

(1) Male and female or (2) नाट्य style and नर्तन style and recognises the intimate connection of the theatre with the वेदवैदिक and the three युग at the root of infinite play and variety of the real human drama which नृत्त, नट and नाट्य copy and reproduce in miniature by the use of some conventions so as to present an artistically unified picture within convenient limits of time space and resources.

That is why says the stanza all sorts and conditions of spectators are pleased by this as by nothing else

of नृ, should refer to the period of transition during which नृ was used in both the senses

Whatever may be the time when नृ and नृ were finally distinguished in senses, it seems almost certain that according to the above discussion, नृ was earlier than नृ. This is borne out by the technical difference in the senses assigned to the words नृत्त, नृत्य and नाट्य (as used in our dramaturgical works) into the nature of which we shall now inquire

### नृत्त, नृत्य and नाट्य

If नृ is distinguished from नृ as suggested above, there must be similar distinctions between the forms of entertainment denoted by these roots. This we can learn from the works on dramaturgy. Let us, then, see what evidence we get about the nature of these terms in various dramaturgical works

(MMC P 59)

धीरोदात्ताद्यस्थानुदनिर्नाय रसाश्रयम्  
तादृ नृत्तं द्विधा प्रोक्तं नृत्यं नृत्तविभागत  
भावश्रयं तु नृत्यं नृत्यं ताललयश्रयम्

(SR. 7th अध्याय)

नाट्यं नृत्यं तथा नृत्यं द्वेधा तदिति कीर्तितम् ।  
नाट्यशब्देन रमे मुख्या रसाभिर्व्यङ्ग्यकारणम् ॥२७॥  
आदिकामिनयेरेव भावनेन व्यनक्ति यः  
तन्मृत्यु मार्गशब्देन प्रसिद्धं नृत्यमद्वितीयम् ॥२८॥

गात्रविष्णुनाम् नु सवामिनवजितम्  
आधिकोस्तप्रद्यत्तं नृत्तं नृत्यविशे विदुः ॥२९॥

(BP P 181)

दृष्टसाम्पदं तत्तद्वास्तवार्थमित्यनन्तरम्  
नृत्तवाच्यं तत्तत्तद्वास्तवार्थमित्यनन्तरम्  
नृत्य भावाभ्यन्तं नृत्तं रसाभ्यन्तमुदाहरणम्  
नृत्यनृत्तविभागश्च बहुभिर्विदुषादित  
तद्वाच्यं नाट्यकरीना भूतस्य द्युपचारकम्  
नृत्यनृत्तविभागस्तु परम्पराकथयन्ति

(DR I, 7-13)

अवस्थानुवृत्तिनाट्यं रूपं दृश्यतदोऽस्मिन्  
रूपकं तत्तत्तद्वास्तवार्थमित्यनन्तरम्  
अन्यद्वाच्यं नृत्यं नृत्तं नाट्यवाच्यम्

(PR P 100-1)

. . . नाट्यं रसाभ्यन्तम्  
भावाभ्यन्तं नृत्तं नृत्यं ताललगाभ्यन्तम्

SDK P 196)

वाक्यायानितयो नाट्यम् पदार्थाभिनया नृत्यम् । गात्रविष्णुनाम्  
नु नृत्यम् ।

Let us now examine the result of these various views with regard to the nature of नाट्य नृत्य and नृत्त. We shall, for the present, leave apart the views expressed in NS and Abh. Following table clearly shows the various views about these terms

Work	वृत्त	वृत्त्य	नाट्य
1 MMC	भावाश्रयम्	ताललयाश्रयम्	रसाश्रयम्
2 PR	"	"	"
3 DR	ताललयाश्रयम्	भावाश्रयम्	"
4 SR	"	"	"
5 BP	रसाश्रयम्	"	वृत्त = नाट्य
6 SDK <sup>15</sup>	ताललयाश्रयम्	"	रसाश्रयम्

Above analysis shows that all are agreed about the technical aspect of नाट्य, but there is a difference of opinion about the other two. It will be noted that in MMC and PR the terms वृत्त and वृत्त्य are 'curiously interchanged', while BP is alone in describing वृत्त as रसाश्रयम्, thus equating it with नाट्य. Let us examine the reasons for this confusion. MMC and PR are very late in date, in comparison with DR and SR. They do not seem to preserve any earlier traditions about this point. Therefore, this curious interchange does not seem to be intentional, and one may rely more on DR which has been recognised as the standard text-book on dramaturgy and from which all other later works have profusely drawn their materials.

15 The quotation from this work as given above when read in connection with BP and SR suggests that the author believed in the same view as held by DR. About वृत्त SDK is clear and as वृत्त्य is called पदार्थमिन्द्रियव्यवहारम्, it is clearly based on नाट्य so is नाट्य based on वृत्त as it is taken as भावाश्रयमिन्द्रियव्यवहारम्.



But in order to understand clearly the import of these terms, we shall have to keep in mind the subtle distinction between भाव and रस DR, after defining रस and रूपा as noted above, further adds <sup>15</sup>

आद्यं पदार्थाभिनयो मागे रेक्षी तदा परम्

So do BP and SR and SDK describes रूपा as पदार्थाभिनयान्तरम् This clearly makes रूपा, a further evolved form of रूपा रूपा is the original form of entertainment on which रूपा was an improvement Our above analysis shows that रूपा involved रस and रस only, not भाव, while रूपा, was essentially connected with भाव <sup>17</sup> and producing भाव in the minds of the audience, is an art far more advanced than mere भावविज्ञेय Thus too, रूपा seems to be earlier SR clearly points out that रूपा involved mere movements of limbs without any अभिनय A dancer would move his or her limbs in harmony with music (or probably this required very little of music as rhythmical movement of limbs only was essential to रूपा) There was no acting in रूपा That was added to रूपा Proper acting would create भाव in the minds of the audience Thus in रूपा, the actor had to act in such a manner that a corresponding भाव would be created in the minds of the spectators Imagine a child dancing on some joyous occasion and add to this motion of the child, rhythm and रस and you have रूपा रूपा

16 cf मञ्जुस्मृत used in the sense of रूपा in भावविज्ञेय. I 5

17 DR I, 15

thus, is dance, while नृत्य is mimetic art. If we realise this essential difference between नृत्य and नृत्य (as seen in DR), it will be seen that नृत्य which is based on ताल only, must be very primitive. As it developed and as the abstract notions of भाव and रस evolved, this same नृत्य, incorporating as it did, further elements, assumed first the form of नृत्य and then the form of नाट्य. Thus both नृत्य and नाट्य, it can be safely said, are further evolved forms of नृत्य. This evolutionary distinction is noticed by Abh also. Abh at P 184, gives the following divisions of नृत्य (1) मसृण (2) उद्धत (3) मसृणमिश्र (4) उद्धतमिश्र (5) that which includes harmonious motions of hands and feet as in रेचक्य and अङ्गहार (6) that which includes music leading to अभिनय (7) that which follows music and वाद्यताल with harmonious motion of limbs. It will be seen that the first four divisions are based on a principle, distinct from the one on which are based the last three. These three can be resolved into two types only—one which has pure नाट्यशिक्षा and in which hands and feet are moved in harmony with भाङ्गवाद्य and the second which includes अभिनय, with harmonious motion of limbs following music. (And it will be recognised that these two are the same as नृत्य and नृत्य). These two types of नृत्य are further on taken as distinct from नाट्य as is understood from the following

प्रथम भेद लौकिके स्वतन्त्रनृते देवतातोषणादौ वा । द्वितीयं पुरस्कार-  
विशेषे परिशिष्टनृत्यप्रभृतयः (Abh 184)

This means that the first type, which is वृत्त was quite distinct and the second type, which is नृत्य was useful in नाट्य. Thus both these are distinct from नाट्य.

It will now be seen that there is no technical difference between the views of SR and DR on the one hand and PR and MMC on the other, only there is an interchange in naming. And bearing in mind that DR and SR are both earlier than PR and MMC, the servile characters of the last two and the literal senses<sup>18</sup> of the words वृत्त and नृत्य, one is inclined to follow DR.

Why, then, did शारदानन्द equate वृत्त with नाट्य by calling it रत्नाश्रयम्? But शारदानन्द also records another view. In the tenth अध्याय he writes<sup>19</sup>

नाट्यस्य प्रविभागस्तु यथाशास्त्रं प्रदर्शयते  
नाटकस्थितवाक्यार्थपदार्थाभिनयान्मकम्  
नटकमेव नाट्यं म्यादिति नाट्यविदा मतम्  
पदार्थमात्राभिमयस्य नर्तककर्म यत्  
तत्तद्वृत्तमेवेन तद्द्वय द्विविधं भवेत्  
तथ भावाश्रयो मार्गो देशी तदहिता मता  
त्रिभार्गनालनियत मार्गमित्यभिधीयते  
देशी भवेत्सुनस्नाल्लगैराश्रयमित्यते

This is, as if reiterating the view of DR. It is well-known that BP is a compendium of the works

18 Both वृत्त and नृत्य are to be derived from नृ, नृत्त being its Past P P and नृत्य its Potential P. Thus too वृत्त which means 'worthy of dancing' shows an advance upon नृत्य meaning danced only.

19 BR P 296

on dramaturgy known to शास्त्रातनय, and he very often, mentions, with or without acknowledgements, various views on the subjects he is dealing with. It may have been so in this case. But the view which considers नृत्त and नाट्य as identical, is found in one other place also. NS notes a पूर्वपक्ष (which does not seem a पूर्वपक्ष as such, but a mere objection forestalled by the author himself) which it has refuted. When भरत explained the origin of नृत्त, the sages asked him <sup>20</sup>

यदा श्राप्यर्थपर्वानां तज्ज्ञैरभिनय इत  
तस्मात्तत् इत छेतत् स्वभावमपेक्षते  
न गीतकार्यसम्बद्धं न चाप्यर्थस्य भावम्  
कस्मात्तत् इत छेतद्गीतत्वासारितुं च

To this doubt the reply is given thus

अत्रोच्यते न सत्यं कचिद्वृत्तमपेक्षते  
किन्तु शोभा जनयतीत्येतो नृत्तं प्रार्थितम्  
प्रायेण सर्वलोकास्य नृत्तमिष्टं स्वभावेन  
मात्रतत्प्रमितिं कृत्वा च नृत्तमेतन्प्रकीर्तितम्  
विगटप्रसगाहप्रमोदाभ्युदयादिषु  
विनादकरणे चेति नृत्तमेतत्प्रवर्तितम्

This doubt and its answer clearly show that even according to NS, नृत्त had no other purpose than to amuse the minds of people. This नृत्त would, therefore, be almost the same as explained by DR. This summary treatment of the पूर्वपक्ष, in NS, has been very elaborately discussed in Abh. Abhinava has summarised the argument of the

पूर्वपक्ष that वृत्त and वृत्त are identical, by advancing three possible issues and then has refuted all these three and then established that वृत्त and वृत्त were not identical. He closes his long discussion by the remark <sup>21</sup>

एव नाद्याङ्गना वृत्तस्य गीतादिननुज्ञादगम्य समर्थित ।

But in so doing Abh brings out two or three points which are of immense value to us in the present enquiry. The पूर्वपक्ष, according to Abh, considered that there existed non-distinction between वृत्त and नाद्य, mainly for the reason that both had अभिनय in them. In saying so, the पूर्वपक्ष distinguishes two varieties of वृत्त. One which is absolutely void of अभिनय (and consists of bending, turning, raising of eye-brows, moving of eye-balls and feet, trembling, throbbing and bending of waist and other forms of रेचकादि) is pure वृत्त according to the पूर्वपक्ष, and the one which includes अभिनय is the same as नाद्य (See P 174 comm ll 22-3 to P 175 ll 1-2). Thus the controversy is about the second kind, for even the पूर्वपक्ष calls the first variety as वृत्त, and as such quite distinct from नाद्य. It is the second variety that is identified with नाद्य.

As against this Abh distinguishes between these two i.e. between the second variety and नाद्य. He says (P 177-8)

वृत्त (by which the above second variety is meant), cannot be the same as नाद्य, for there is

no अभिनय in वृत्त as you point out to be. It may be urged against this that in वृत्तकाव्यः like दोम्बिका, the नर्तकी tries to attract the mind of the king, by music etc., and thus these वृत्तकाव्यः must contain अभिनय. But Abh. says that the अभिनय required in वृत्तकाव्यः is distinct from the अभिनय required in नाट्य. In वृत्तकाव्यः, the नर्तकी does resort to अङ्गव्यापार by proper gesticulations of eyes etc., but all that is for attracting the king in whose presence she dances. Thus this अभिनय of नर्तकी excites the passion of the king but the अभिनय of a नट is for playing the role of some one else and thus he has to show feelings etc., as experienced by another person and make them manifest on the stage, by visible representation. A नर्तकी does not play any one's role and in her case she has nothing to represent visibly. All that she has to do, is to attract the heart of the king by personal appeal, as it were, through her gesticulations. She has not to put on any one's dress etc. (thus आह्वयः अभिनय is almost absent in her case).

This distinction, so descriptively, brought out by Abh., has really a very important significance. We have seen that according to DR and others, वृत्त was considered भावाश्रयम् and नाट्य was रसाश्रयम्. Here, too, the वृत्त that includes अभिनय, is shown to have the capacity of exciting the भाव only while the feelings evoked in the hearts of the spectators by नाट्य, are shown to have a lengthy process, which really means that रस is evoked. Thus Abh. refutes the arguments of the पूर्वपक्ष by

saying that his second variety of वृत्त has a sort of अग्निद, but it can produce नाव only, not रच, which would be evoked only by नाअ which, therefore, is distinct from this second variety of वृत्त

Now it will be seen that the distinction between वृत्त, वृत्त and नाअ as known to DR and others, is also recognised by Abb only, he does not use the term वृत्त but embraces both वृत्त and वृत्त of DR by वृत्त, of which, however, two aspects corresponding to DR's वृत्त and वृत्त, are distinguished as shown above

It seems that this distinction between वृत्त and नाअ, was known to हर्ष, महन्त्र and महोदय, as is seen from the following quotation found in Abb

समानदृष्टदृष्टदृष्टदृष्टदृष्ट पूर्ण चार्त्त वा वृत्त एव नाअवृत्तयो  
नेदस्तुत्यानुदात्तं इति हर्षवर्णिकम् । तिसार्द्धमेवद्वन्द्ववृत्तकनिधननाद्याद्वृत्त  
वृत्तमन्वागतं इति महन्त्र । समन्तात् इत्यादिमहोदयवाक्ये इति  
महोदय ।

Thus the view that नाव and नाअ are identical seems to have sprung up out of the confusion that would arise when वृत्त was developing into वृत्त. At that time no distinct notions could have been formed about the two different varieties and therefore वृत्त and वृत्त were known by the same term वृत्त. This confusion is bound to happen in such a transitional period. But when these two forms had crystallised they came to be differently known as वृत्त and वृत्त. This confusion between वृत्त and नाअ is seen in SDK and NSD. In several other places also such a use of the term नाअ is found which

would be reminiscent of the above noted transitional period

Now it will be seen that शास्त्रानुसृत्य, presumably referred to such a view as has been presupposed by Abh. But in reality they all (i.e. all our extant theorists) took नृत्त to be quite distinct from नाट्य. From the point of view of evolution, first comes नृत्त, then नृत्य and last नाट्य. नृत्त is mere dance, नृत्य had gesture added to it, while नाट्य had speech (i.e. dialogue) too. Thus नाट्य incorporated all the three features—dance, music and speech—which are so essential for the creation of drama. This technical difference between नृत्त, नृत्य and नाट्य should be fully borne in mind for the detailed study of our dramas.

## 2 रूपक and उपरूपक

It will now be seen that India has witnessed three distinct forms of entertainment, based on नृत्त, नृत्य and नाट्य, but the one based on नृत्त never seems to have attained to the position of a drama. It remained for the court hall of the king and for the courtyard of the temple. It was an accomplishment of the courtesan from whom even the princes and princesses learnt the art. But as the tastes of the people were cultivated and as their general culture evolved further, they were not satisfied by mere rhythmic dancing. They had to invent newer forms of entertainment and they soon saw that their original dance combined with histrionics and with music gave them the



necessary variety. This they adopted and called नट्य. But the society was progressing fast, their mental horizon was ever widening, their abstract thinking was ever getting deeper and deeper. They then, wanted still subtler form of entertainment. They evolved नट्य, and by gradual degrees took it to a height of refinement which even to-day evokes the admiration of all the civilized peoples. The form of entertainment based on नृत्य, our dramaturgists called उपरूपक\* and the one based on नट्य, they designated as रूपक.

There was a technical difference between रूपक and उपरूपक, which is very well brought out by हेनचन्द्र (who has appropriated the whole passage from Abh) in the following extract (KS P 329-330)

अथ पाठ्यस्य गेयस्य च रूपकस्य को भेदः । अयमाहयायते-पाठ्ये हि भेदः गीतं चेत्तुभयमनपिच्छितम् । तथा हि करहरागपरि मण्डलादि चतस्रादोपसंगि तत्स्वरूपं लयादिलक्ष्यया चानियतमेव यथासौ प्रयुज्यमानत्वेन विपर्ययात् । गेयं तु गीतमत्र च द्वयमपि स्वप्रतिष्ठितम् । तथा हि यस्य पाठ्यं लज्जयति स्वरूपादिकं निरूपितं तत्र विपर्ययमिति मन्यादिवत् । यद्यपि क्वचिद्गानं प्राधान्यं यथा प्रख्यातगो, क्वचिद्वाद्यप्राधान्यं यथा भागवतादिषु भगवत्परात्मिकादिप्रधान्यं, क्वचिद्गीतमानरूपकाभिधेयप्राधान्यं यथा लम्बिकादिप्रधान्यान्तरं हुदुम्काराद्यवसरे । अतएव तत्र लोकभाषया वदितार्थं इति प्रसिद्धिः । तत्रापि गीताप्रधानेन वाद्ये प्रयोग इति गेयमिति निर्दिष्टम् । ..

किं च पाठ्यं मानान्तरकल्याणुत्पन्नमायमप्युपयोजितं पात्रं प्रति भागानियतस्य नियतस्य छन्दोन्धारण्येभिर्धीयत अमद्वयान्तरेण तु दाया लयालदिना यादवर्तुचतस्राद्याऽभिनयः सान्त्विकादि प्रभावसामुदायितया प्रयोगयोग्यमनुचितार्थपरिपूर्णं ध्रुवातिनं क्रियते । गेयं च मन्दादेरेव वस्तुभूतस्वरमादिभ्यष्यति विपर्ययिष्येयजनया कृता प्रतीतिः स्यात् . व्युत्पत्त्यभिधानं च

\*For the actual usage of the word etc see further

नेय नास्ति । पाठ्यं तु तदेव प्रधानं भरतमुनिप्रमृतिना तथैव मूलतः प्रवृत्तेरित्यल बहुना अप्रस्तुतप्रपञ्चेनेति ।

It will be seen that नेय of हेमचन्द्र is our ऋत or उपरूप and his पाठ्य is our नाट्य or रूपक.<sup>22</sup> The chief point of distinction between the two forms is that the उपरूप had mainly to do with the bodily gestures and music, while both these occupied a secondary position in रूपक. Thus उपरूपक would place greater emphasis on कायाभिनय, while रूपक would require सात्त्विक and other अभिनयः.

To this distinction between रूपक and उपरूपक we shall have to revert later on just now it is sufficient to note these salient features of both the forms. The above distinction brought out by KS is also borne out by other works. BP, very clearly mentions (P 231) that रूपकः were रसात्मक and उपरूपकः were भासात्मक, also it calls (P 255) the उपरूपकः as वृत्त्यभेदा and रूपकः as नाट्यभेदा. The distinction (P 181) that नाट्यः is वाक्याभिनयात्मक and ऋतः is पदार्थाभिनयात्मक also points to the same principle.

After thus understanding the technical nature of रूपक and उपरूपक, it will now be easier to study their divisions in details. Let us take up रूपक first.

<sup>22</sup> KS नेयः रूपक is termed उपरूपक by Abh. It also uses the term दीपमानरूपक. Of P 174 183

## CHAPTER II

### *RŪPAKA*

(Nāṭya and Rūpaka)

## CHAPTER II

### RŪPAKA

(Nāṭya and Rūpaka)

THE word रूप is to be derived from र् a root, the exact sense of which, in earlier literature, has not been as yet settled रूप, a substantive formed from this root, has been used in some of our early works. According to Sten Konow<sup>1</sup>, this word occurring in the fourth Rock Edict of अशोक, refers to a shadow device, which leads to the acceptance of the existence of shadow-plays in ancient India. But Keith<sup>2</sup> takes र् to mean visible representation. De<sup>3</sup> supports him. It seems that Keith is inclined to take this word in connection with puppet-play or Pantomime, which existed in India. He thinks so, because in धर्मशास्त्र<sup>4</sup> of the Buddhist canon, the term रूपरसम् occurs and there, just before in the text, there is a mention of a puppet. This sense may hold good in the case of the Fourth Rock Edict of अशोक as अशोक there, speaks of exhibiting spectacles of the dwellings of gods, of elephants and of bonfires. This sense would be admirably suitable for the compound रूपकम्,<sup>5</sup> where it is obvious that some art is referred to. That रूप in

1 Sin D P 54

2 Sin D P 54

3 IHQ Vol VII P 544

4 V, 334 (See Sin D P 54)

5 Milindapaṇṇa P 344

these earlier references, alludes to some sort of art of representation, seems definite enough from the very context, and there is every reason to believe that it referred to visible representation, as its later sense attests रूप in this sense, is used in NS, but only in the compound दशरूप, which occurs there five or six times<sup>6</sup> There are some more places where the word रूप is seen in NS,<sup>7</sup> but the sense applicable in every case is either 'form' or रूपमय, or mere beauty These have no reference to our enquiry, in which रूप is to be taken as meaning visible representation but there is one term सत्तरूप used in NS, some four or five times,<sup>8</sup> the sense of which is not easy to determine It may refer to some sort of special feature of dramatic representation, as it is used in connection with शूररूप रूप also seems to have been used to designate some वाद्यविशेष in NS at one place<sup>9</sup> But these references do not lead us anywhere Only the definite term दशरूप bears testimony that रूप meant a dramatic representation, as early as NS

There is an interesting point in connection with this early sense of रूप रूपयति and other forms of रूप, when used in the stage directions, mean 'to

6 NS XVII, 193 XVIII 1, 4 181 XIX, 46 128 XXVII, 50 60

7 NS I 29, XIX 59 79, 132 XXI, 35 67 177, XXII 79 94

8 NS V 32 36 40 45 XXXI 213 329 also cf XXI, 67 and SR 7 1312

9 NS XXXI 120

act so as to represent visibly a particular situation or emotion' An analysis of our extant dramas shows that roots नट्, ह् and अभि+नी and their forms like नाटिनकेन, नाटयेन, नाटयति स्वयमि स्वयिन्वा etc., are used whenever such a stage-direction is intended All mean the same thing, but a careful investigation reveals the fact that ह् is invariably used in earlier (i.e. earlier than DR) dramas, while an exclusive use of नट् and अभि+नी is seen in all the later dramas With a view to ascertain this, I have collected evidence from all the dramas of note and following is the result

वरहचि's उमगमिशरिका has no occasion for such a stage-direction I have examined प्रतिना प्रनित्रा, स्वप्रज्ञावदना, मन्त्र, पञ्चात्र and चाहदत्त of भाव and have found that नट् is used only twice, once in स्वत्र, and once in चाहन् while ह् is not used at all in these plays कल्हदास's dramas show a fair proportion of both these roots विष्णोर्विशीयम् uses ह् 10 times and नट् 12 times In मालविकाग्निमित्रम्, ह् and नट् both are used 7 times In अभिज्ञानशाकुन्तलम्, both the roots are used 11 times निरूप्य in all the other dramas is used in the sense of 'closely observing' but in अभिज्ञानशाकुन्तलम्, it has been twice used in the sense of 'visibly representing', as in मददवाग निरूप्य <sup>10</sup> 'कौमुदीमोक्ष', which seems to be a fairly early drama,<sup>11</sup> uses नट् once and ह् twice भगवदन्तुम् has no such stage-direction In all the

10 अभिज्ञानशाकुन्तलम् Nir Press P 85 67, 93

11 See AEOPI XII P 50ff The arguments advanced there are plausible

three dramas of हर्ष, नाट् only is used to the exclusion of रूप्, while in मतविलास of महेन्द्रविक्रम, a drama of the same age as हर्ष's, only रूप् is used. In भगवद्गीता, नाट् is usual, but उत्तररामचरित uses रूप् once in the V act आश्वर्यचूडामणि, a drama of this age, has used नाट् only two times and रूप् 12 times. सुशारदा has नाट् only. वेणीवहार uses नाट् in most cases but has used रूप् twice. धूर्तविराट्, which is certainly earlier than DR, uses रूप् once. These are all the dramas admitted on all hands to have been composed before DR. I have also examined a number of dramas composed after the time of DR, and they all show an exclusive use of नाट्, with only one exception of the dubious पार्वतीपरिणयम्, which uses रूप् 4 times and नाट् 3 times. Of the later dramas I have examined among others, all the available भाग्य and प्रहसन, परिजातमञ्जरी, कोमुदीमित्राणद, कर्णमुन्दरी, विदग्धमाधव, पार्थसारथ्यम्, the six dramas of बलराम, उन्मत्तगद्य, कुन्दमाला, सत्यहरिश्चन्द्र, प्रसन्नराघव, रतिमन्मथ and वसन्तीकलहम्. All these show नाट् only.<sup>12</sup>

If this analysis means anything it seems certain that by the time of DR, रूप् as a root, was definitely superseded by नाट्. Only the earlier dramas show रूप्, not the later ones. This has an interesting parallel in the usage of the word रूपक. It is found that रूपक, as a generic term for drama, came into general prevalence only after DR's age. The above analysis of the dramas also shows that

12 I have not examined dramas of very late dates (i.e. of 17th and 18th centuries) as their evidence is useless in such an enquiry.

whereas almost all the dramas later than DR, use the generic term रूपक in their प्रस्तावनाs, the earlier dramas are, as if by conspiracy, silent about that word. Not one drama of a date earlier than DR has used this word<sup>13</sup> In the works on dramaturgy, again, NS does not know the word रूपक as a generic term for drama, but Abh knows it and अभिनव was almost a contemporary of धनञ्जय, if not later Earlier term for designating the dramatic genre was नाट्य and in some cases रूप (as in दृश्य in NS)

The result of this analysis puts a somewhat curious fact before us It seems that नाट् was the earlier root meaning 'to represent visibly' and नाट्य the earlier term meaning a drama In the course of evolution रूप came in the field,<sup>14</sup> both as a root and as a substantive ( रूप ) The root रूप held sway side by side with नाट् for nearly a thousand years and more and then dropped out and नाट् survived, but रूप developed into रूपक, superseded नाट्य and held field ever afterwards

This shows that रूपक, as a generic term for drama came into vogue about the ninth or tenth century.

Let us now see the results of this whole discussion We have examined the terms दृत्, दृश्य,

13 पद्मसूत्रिका uses रूपक and also both रूप and नाट् but as its date is a matter of uncertainty we may not attach any value to it

14 There is enough ground for the evolution of such a sense of the root



नाट्य and रूपक and following seem to be the senses attached to them

- (a) नृत्य Dancing
- (b) नृत्य Dancing+music+a little of acting. This is based on भावस
- (c) नाट्य (a) + (b) + full histrionics This is based on रस
- (d) रूपक नाट्य + taking the role of some one else

To explain (a) A person experiences an emotion and not being able to control himself begins to exhibit the emotion by moving his limbs. In so doing he has no consideration for others. He jumps and moves i.e. dances just to satisfy himself irrespective of others around him. This is नृत्य. This art, therefore, is exclusively subjective. नृत्य, therefore, can very well be illustrated by the random dancing of a child.

(b) But soon one comes to realise that a particular movement of hand or foot or a particular movement of eye, lip, eye-brow etc., conveys a particular emotion to others. Thus the random dancing comes to be regularised. A dancer, experiencing joy himself wishes to show this to others, and dances in a particular manner, this shows to the other that the dancer feels joy. This is नृत्य. In this, an objective element creeps in. The dancer has an eye to others who look at him. He may, at times, take the help of music in expressing his emotions. This

is supposed to be based on भाव, because the dancer as well as the spectator does not go beyond that stage. Dancer experiences an emotion (भाव), and shows it by his dance and the spectator realises that भाव. It seems that in नृत्य the spectator knows by the gestures of the नर्तकी that she experiences a particular emotion, but it is not essential that the spectator himself should experience the same emotion. This art therefore, is based on भाव and is mostly subjective, being objective only partially.

(c) But in नाट्य the dancer experiences an emotion and so interprets it in acting that even the spectator loses his identity and feels that emotion. A नर्तकी, for instance, is dancing before a king and wishes to stimulate the feeling of love in him. She dances and acts in such a manner that the king's emotion of love is fully excited. This is नाट्य. Here the art is mostly objective, but only partially subjective, as the नर्तकी may not always feel the same emotion herself. मालविका's वलि, referred to earlier, is of this type. Various types of नाट्य described in works like NSD also, fall under this class.

(d) So far we have concerned ourselves with one art only—that of expressing one's own emotion by some sort of visible representation. Dance, music and histrionics—all would contribute to this end. But there is another art also. A person knows that at the time of parting from

सीता, राम experienced highly tragic mood. He wants to show to others the feelings experienced by राम. He comes before them, dresses and acts in such a clever manner that the audience, for the time, lose themselves and experience the same emotion as represented by the actor. This process, it will be seen, includes the whole of the नाट्य-process and adds to it the element of giving visibility to the part played by him by means of dress etc.<sup>15</sup> Thus रस, which as an art was originally distinct from नाट्य came to be combined with it. रस as a distinct art consisted in taking the form (role) of some one else, by means of the accessories like dress etc, and नाट्य was acting etc. In what we call drama, both these came to be combined together and this new art was given the name of रस and later on of रसक. Its distinction as रसक was settled about the 9th or 10th century, earlier the drama was known by the terms नाट्य, नाट्य or रस. In course of time रसक became the generic term and नाट्य a designation of an individual type.

So, originally the art first designated by वृत्त and नृत्य and then culminating in the synthetic form of नाट्य was distinct from the art designated by the term रस. Later on both these were combined into a synthetic form. But it should be noted that at this transitional stage, the usage of

15 This therefore is completely an objective art. In it the actor has no personality of his own. He imposes upon himself another personality and exhibits the same before the audience. So both ways this art becomes objective.

the terms cannot have been very rigid. Therefore just as there is a possibility of confusion in the usage of नृत्य and नाट्य as shown earlier, there is also a possibility of confusion in the usage of the terms नाट्य and रूपक with reference to drama. And we have shown above how and when these terms were finally distinguished from one another<sup>15</sup>

Thus we have fixed the nature and exact meanings of these terms. But there were some other terms which had, more or less, a similar sense सर्गिक<sup>17</sup>, काव्य, प्रेक्षा, सनाज and such other terms referred to the same art but emphasised one or the other element therein. Thus, सर्गिक would naturally have a predominance of music, काव्य of poetry and प्रेक्षा of visible elements. सनाज may refer to any assembly, but in the Ashokan edicts, it

- 16 The following definitions given by DR corroborates the above conclusions

अव्यक्तवृत्तिर्नृत्य इव इत्यनेनपदे ।

रूपक नामयोगेनात्

And all the later dramaturgs's have copied down these definitions

- 17 It seems that earlier still, there was another term which designated some sort of dramatic representation. डाहवि स रम्यभित्तिका has this

कुलपुत्रपुत्रद्वय मन्त्रे पुत्रद्वयिजय नाम मन्त्रक दद्यात्तन्मित्रेणदम्

where the name पुत्रद्वयिजय and the instruction दद्यात्तन्मित्रेणदम् make it possible that the term मन्त्रक also had a sense of dramatic representation. मन्त्रकपुत्रम् also uses मन्त्रकम् in this sense in its प्रस्तावना cf. कानकपुत्र too काव्य, too seems to have been used in the same sense cf. NS—सर्गिकप्रतिष्ठापने कावे XVIII, 106

seems to have been used to refer to some sort of spectacles. But all these were loosely used and were mostly current in the transitional period. नाट्य and रूपक were the only two terms which survived finally, रूपक gaining the ultimate ground as the generic term for 'Drama'.

We can, now, take up a detailed study of the varieties of रूपक as recognised by our dramaturgists. I shall, in what follows, collect all the available data about the रूपकs with a view to ascertain their general nature and reserve for another section the discussion of such problems as would arise from such data.

# CHAPTER III

*KŪPAKA (continued)*

Types of Rip 12

## CHAPTER III

### RŪPAKA (continued)

#### Types of Rūpaka—general

**I**N this chapter, we propose to collect data from our dramaturgical works, first about the number of species and then about the nature of रूपा individually, adding, at the end of each variety, such remarks as may arise from the collected data, and reserving a comparative study of the growth of these individual types till the end of the chapter

Although all our known works on dramaturgy, more or less, follow रूपा, a detailed study evinces certain differences of views it is, therefore, necessary to collect data from all the extant works. In so doing, I shall proceed in strict chronological order, so that it will be easy to detect the growth of the type under consideration. Remarks appended to the details of each type embody a careful sifting of the materials collected and put in clear terms the phases of the growth traceable in the different dramaturgical works

#### Number of Species

NS recognises नाटक, प्रकरण, अङ्क, व्याख्यान, भाग, मन-वसा, वीर्य, प्रदशन, दिन, ईदाम्, (XVIII, 2-3) But अङ्क is alternately named as उच्छिष्टा (XVIII, 8) Further on नाटी is called a mixture of नाटक and प्रकरण (XVIII, 106)

AP has these same types but it also enumerates seventeen types of उपरूपक in the same list, without designating them as such, but including all the 27 (10+17) types under the general head नाटक (338, 1—4)

DR (I, 11) has the same ten varieties, including नाटिका under नाटक भरत's नाटी has, here, developed into नाटिका

KS (P 317) notes 12 रूपक with the addition of नाटिका and सटक to the usual list

ND enumerates 12 रूपक, including नाटिका and प्रकरण under रूपक and adding the following note

नाटकप्रकरणयोः प्रधान्यमाह । अङ्ग इति उपरुष्टिकाङ्गो न पुनरवस्था-  
सामान्यादिरूपः । (P 26)

But in his treatment of नाटिका (P 121—122) and प्रकरण (P 123), a trend, to consider them as sub varieties of नाटक and प्रकरण is clearly visible, and distinctly enough it enumerates twelve types. Of course नाटक and प्रकरण are called predominant (P 26)

BP also follows NS in the ten varieties, pointing out, however, the predominance of नाटक (P 221) It takes नाटिका as an admixture of नाटक and प्रकरण

RS has the same ten varieties as NS (III,3), but it expressly notes that नाटक is the basis of all the other varieties thus

अङ्ग प्रकरणादीनां नाटकं प्रवृत्तिं ध्रुवं  
अतिशयलघुनाटकादङ्गोपजीवनात्  
अन्यानि रूपानि स्युर्विकारा नाटकं प्रति ।



PR does not note नाटिका

SD has the same ten types and takes नाटिका as an उपव्यक्त.

MMC notes that some include नाटिका and प्रकृति under उपव्यक्त (P 73), which may refer to the SD school

भगवदनुक्तम्, a प्रहसन, has the following

अथ तु नाटकप्रकरणेऽष्टावन्तु वारहमिहसूत्रमनुक्तारव्याजोगमात्मनाप-  
र्वादीष्टानुष्टिप्ताहुप्रहसनादिषु दशानिषु (P 3)

## Remarks

This last evidently refers to a distinct principle of division, for नाटक and प्रकरण are here, taken as the basis of the other ten types, while according to the usual theory as seen above they themselves form the first two types. Out of these ten types, again, सङ्घ and वार are not seen in the list of the main व्यक्त anywhere, though सङ्घ occurs as an उपव्यक्त. About वार, which is not found anywhere as a व्यक्तप्रकार Prof K H Dhruva suggests as follows (in a letter to me) "The word नाट्यवार is used in भावप्रकाशनम् वासवदत्तानाट्यवार occurs as the name of a drama in ND. Abh. speaks of वासवदत्तानाट्यवारा as a composition of सुबन्धु. This नाट्यवारा of सुबन्धु is alluded to in the beginning of दक्षि's अवन्ती-सुन्दरीकथा. हेमाचार्य calls सुबन्धु to have been a minister of चन्द्रगुप्तमौर्य and विन्तुमार. Abh (on 18, 1) has अनया आदिना चन्द्रगुप्तविन्तुमारादनेऽपि समृद्धन्ते इति, and it refers to this नाट्यवारा. In both the words—नाट्यवारा and नाट्यवार—नाट्य is equivalent to 'act'. Therefore नाट्यवार means 'collection of acts', and नाट्यवारा means 'series of

acts' Thus नाट्यार and नाट्यकार are synonyms of नाट्य They were used at about the 4th century B C, if not earlier To use the एकदेश वार as seen in भगवद् is improper" However वार here is taken as a type of drama and it is not in accordance with NS

Moreover these ten varieties of भगवद्, again, would yield 12 types, if taken along with नाटक and प्रकरण which are, here, taken as the basis of the other varieties This may, then, seem to preserve the same tradition as KS and ND school But from the above analysis, it will be seen that whereas KS and ND substantially agree with the theory of ten रूपक (though by including one of the sub-varieties, they preserve the tradition of 12 रूपक), भगवद्जुक्तम् is quite alone in its enumeration of the 12 रूपक, as it takes नाटक and प्रकरण as the basis of other species, which shows that it followed a tradition quite distinct from that of NS

This statement of भगवद्जुक्तम् takes नाटक and प्रकरण as two generic terms We have got some other references, too, which treat these two as the generic terms for drama अभिज्ञानशाकुन्तलम् uses both नाटक and प्रकरण in its प्रस्तावना in distinct senses When the सूत्रधार asks अथ वनमत्प्रकरणमपि, he, as if it were, suggests that प्रकरण was equivalent to the later रूपक, while वनमत् may probably, refer to the fact that there were some varieties of प्रकरण And then the सूत्रधार replies that he was

going to perform a new नाटक etc, which would mean that नाटक was a variety of प्रकरण. There is another fact which we have already pointed out that रूपक as a generic term for drama, came into prevalence only in DR's time. Earlier dramas either do not use any generic term or use the word नाटक in their प्रस्तावनाऽऽ शूद्रक's पद्मप्रासृतकम्, a भाग recently brought to light, twice refers to a कुमुदती-प्रकरण. At P 23, there is a passage as follows

कुमुदतीभूमिकाप्रकरणपात्रमुपनय (probably to be emended as कुमुदतीप्रकरणभूमिका )

and at P 25 the following is seen

किंनर तालपत्रकेभिस्त्रिखितम् । किं ब्रवीषि—नाटकभूमिका इति ।  
(गृहीत्वा वाचयति) कुमुदतीप्रकरणे शूर्पकामन्त्रा राजदारिका धात्री रहस्यपालभते ।

Here, too, प्रकरण and नाटक seem to have been used in a generic sense, though प्रकरण, here, may well be the type known to NS as the low taste of the princess indicates but नाटक is certainly used in a generic sense. भाग in his प्रतिज्ञा uses प्रकरण in a generic sense. सूत्रगर in the प्रस्तावना says -

ततस्तत्र गीतप्रस्तादिते रत्ने वयमपि प्रकरणमारभामहे ।

This word प्रकरण cannot be taken in its usual technical sense here (as has been wrongly done by Keith) as we shall make clear further

These few but decisive statements are enough to prove that both नाटक and प्रकरण were taken as generic terms at some time or other

With this conclusion, well accords the fact that AP takes नाटक as a generic term, for it desig-

nates the 328th chapter as नाटकनिरूपणम् ND, too, considers नाटक and प्रकाण as the predominant types. With this concur the views of BP and RS.

But this (particularly RS) may lead us to believe that other types had sprung up from नाटक. And that would be a very important question, for it may be taken to mean that other types were non-existent at first and came into being only very late, after the नाटक type had perfected. That this view cannot be sound we shall see later, when we shall discuss the question in details.

Types of Rupika—individual

### 1. नाटक

Def ND defines it thus (P 28)

नाटकमिति नाटयति विचित्र रजनाप्रवेशेन सभ्यानां हृदयं नर्तयतीति नाटकम् । अभिनवगुप्तस्तु समनार्थस्यापि नटेर्नाटकशब्दं व्युत्पादयति तत्र तु घटादित्येन हस्त्राभाप्रतिपत्त्य । यद्यपि कथादयाऽपि श्रोतृहृदयं नाटयन्ति तथाप्यङ्गोपायादीनां वैचित्र्यहेतूनामभावात् न तथा रञ्जकत्वमिति न ते नाटकम् । तथा नाटके प्रधानपुरुषार्थेषु राज्ञा तदङ्गभूतेष्वमात्यादीनां च बहुना व्युत्पादकमिति कतिपयव्युत्पादकानि प्रकरणादीन्यपि न नाटकमिति ।

NS (XVIII, 10-91)

Hero Renowned

Plot Renowned (It should be noted here that by 'renowned' our theorists mean a plot that is taken from any work which is famous in the author's own times, such as रामायण, महाभारत, बृहद्कथा etc.) It may depict the life incidents of a king or it may have a divine hero. It should have grandeur, luxury, and prosperity of every kind, various, रस and भाव,

resulting from joy and sorrow.

Act Def अङ्क is so called because, in it the incidents rise gradually into सङ्ग and रस, (14)

Keeping in mind the whole action, one should make an act (i.e. the first act) upto the extension of विन्दु. The first act should complete one thread, बीज and should slightly commence विन्दु. There may figure the king, queen, servants, family-priest, minister and merchants and it should not have only one रस. Anger, negligence, grief, curse, disturbance, marriage, and marvellous scenes should be represented directly, while battle, deposition of a king, death, besieging a town should not be directly represented, but suggested by द्रव्य, etc. Hero should never be killed. Duration of the action in an act, must last only for one day. Many threads of the plot may be woven in one act, provided these do not hamper the necessary progress of the action. At the end of an act, all the characters should make their exit. Knowing the divisions of the day, one should arrange the various actions in an act. If an incident is not completed at the end of the day act should be completed all the same, and the remaining portion should be suggested by means of द्रव्य, etc. Hero should be present in the act but a द्रव्य, is full of conversation between servants. There may be five to ten acts. द्रव्य may occur between any two acts, in order to effect the necessary abridgement of the story, having neither high nor middle characters, nor

noble speech, but only Prākṛits After the break of an act, action with one month's or one year's (but in no case, with more than one year's) duration may be suggested (in a प्रवेशक) If a character goes on a long journey, the act should be completed then

DR (3, 1-43)

When सूत्रधार retires another actor - स्थापक - should enter and introduce the drama He should suggest the plot, बीज and one of the characters and pleasing the audience with sweet verses, he should describe a season, resorting to भारती वृत्ति In this introductory scene, he may employ the वीच्यङ्ग with profit

In आगुप, the सूत्रधार may converse with नटी or माण्डि or विद्वदक on a subject pertaining to himself, hinting at the plot Of this (आगुप or प्रस्तावना) there are three forms (1) opening of the story (कथोद्घात), (2) the entrance of a character (प्रवृत्तक) and (3) the particular presentation (प्रयोगातिशय) कथोद्घात is that in which a character enters taking up the remark of the सूत्रधार or the sense thereof Thus it is of two kinds प्रवृत्तक is one, in which a person is hinted at by the resemblance of some season प्रयोगातिशय is one, in which a character enters in accordance with a reference by the सूत्रधार by the words 'Here he is'

Hero must be full of noble qualities, धीरोदात्त, powerful, desirous of fame, highly energetic, preserver of the Vedas, of a famous descent, ling or a divine person

**Plot** The dramatist should select his plot from इतिहास etc., and whatever in the original story is incompatible with the hero or रस, should be abandoned or fashioned otherwise and deciding beforehand what to give up, he should bring into play the acceptable and disregard the rest

The body of the plot should be divided into बीज, बिन्दु etc., (the five अवस्थाः), into मुक्त etc., (the five सन्धिः), and into five अर्थवृत्तिः with their subdivisions and अनुसन्धिः (The पताका incident should be void of सङ्घट्टः, so too, the प्रकटी should be without सन्धिः) Thus dividing the body, he may arrange a विच्छिन्नक or an act directly as it suits his purpose विच्छिन्नक may just follow प्रस्तावना but whenever the plot is interesting from the beginning, it should open with an act directly, following the अनुसङ्ग

Main रस all throughout, should be nourished by भाव, विभाव, अनुभाव, सत्त्विक and व्यभिचारिणी and should never be overclouded by other रसः nor should the excessive रस cloud the plot or नाट्यालङ्कार

Long journey, death, battle, revolution of kingdoms, siege, eating, bath, sexual intercourse, besmearing the body and putting on clothes should never be shown directly So, too, the death of the hero should never happen and yet whatever is necessary should not be given up

KS (P 317) points out that 'दिनमरोदयम्' in NS, refers to a hero having some divine help, but does not mean a divine hero Thus there

must be our central heroes in a नाटक Heroine, however, may be divine e.g. ऊर्वशी

Plot must be famous but slightly imaginary too (P. 37) notes that the hero may be a राजा i.e. not necessarily a king

BP (P. 93 ff) Referring to the element of imaginary portion in the plot of a नाटक, it is here remarked that even मानुस allows (भाषित) it In रामानन्द, a drama, the description of विसीषण, even before सीता's capture, is imaginary

It is noted that even कौटिल्य requires पताकास्थान and at the close of the वीज, the commencement of विन्दु in the first act

नाटक should have नान्दी and प्रस्तावना चित्रावलि\* has an act, having action co-extensive with one day but there may be an act within the space of half a day as in गौरीगृह \*

It is stated that सुबन्धु divides नाटक into पूर्ण, प्रशान्त, भास्वर, ललित and समग्र पूर्ण may have all the five सधिस e.g. इत्यारवण प्रशान्त should have प्रशान्त रस prominent It should have the following सधिस न्यास, न्यासमुद्देश, वीजाकि, वीजदर्शन and अनुदिष्टसङ्ग It should have सावती style, so द्रोहिणी e.g. स्वप्रवासवदत्ता In it, when the queen, under calamity, being taken away from the king is placed in the hands of मागधिका, मुग्धमथि called न्यास occurs प्रतिमुग्ध of न्यास is called

\*Prof K H Dhruva suggests that these may be the titles of the first acts of उपलक्षण\* and रामानन्द respectively



सचिनेद e g seeing पद्मावती's beautiful face decorated with विदेवक, the king knew that अवन्तिका was still living बीजादि happens when the king through anxiety cries out 'एहि वासवदन क्व क्व गच्छि।' बीजदर्शन occurs in searching for the other, on seeing one out of the two objects which were always associated, by sight or touch e g

विप्रसुप्त कनो मे वीजया प्रनिवेशिन ।

ता तु देवी न पदमामि यस्या घाववती प्रिया ।

And when the words - किं त भूय त्रिय कुशाम् - are not used, it is called by भरत and others, अनुदिष्टवहार

In माम्बर type, again, there may be the following सयि माता, नायकविद्धि, अङ्गलानि तस्या परिभय and मातावशिष्टवहार When the नायक and प्रतिनायक are both renowned, माला-सयि is caused e g चन्द्रगुप्त and नन्दन When another man achieves the desired object by deceiving the नायक ( ? प्रतिनायक ), there happens नायकविद्धि e g रावण was deceived by मारिच ग्लानि happens when विमर्द etc are seen e g besieging of लक्ष्म by the दानव after crossing the ocean परिभय happens when the hero is overpowered by the enemies' forces e g गमनमात्रे, बन्धुगुप्त tied up by नागनाथ मातावशिष्टवहार happens when after killing the enemy, the females captured by him, are tested e g सीता's ordeal after राम's death. This माम्बर type may be full of भारती style and heroic and अद्भुत रस e g दायानाथ द

ललित may have वैजयि style and erotic e g कर्कशीविप्रलम्भ It will have the following five सयि - विलास, विप्रलम्भ, विरोध, विरोधन and उद्दिष्टोपमहति. विलास happens when the hero and others enjoy according to

seasons e g वत्सराज's enjoying of वसन्तोत्सव विप्रलम्भ is separation of lovers by jealousy or by will e g वत्सराज's separation from वासवदत्ता विप्रयोग, (the text has विप्रलम्भ once more, but it is incorrect) is that separation between lovers which is caused by curses etc e g ययाति's separation from क्षमिष्ठा विशेषण is purification of faults on account of fear of scandal e g सीता's by राम उद्दिश्योपसंहृति - as in विप्रमोक्षशील - the message of इन्द्र 'May ऊर्वशी live with you long, being your wife'

समग्र type will have all the वृत्तिस and all the characteristics and is represented by महाकाव्य

उपश्लेष, परिहार, परिन्यास, विलोभन - these elements should be present in all the types, युक्ति, प्राप्ति, समाधान, विधान, and परिभाषना should be present in the प्रशान्त type only and अज्ञापनाद, सकेत, प्रसङ्ग, विदग्ध and सप्रद with their sub-divisions should be present in भास्वर type, while विरोध, प्रणय, पयुषासन, पुष्प and वज्र should necessarily be woven in the ललित type

But a नाटक in which various elements of all the types are seen, is called वृत्ताचार and it has been called समग्र

SD (VI, 7 ff) Acts must be arranged after the fashion of गोपुच्छ This has been taken by some to mean that the acts should be made gradually shorter (क्रमेणाद्गृह्यते कर्तव्यं) while others say 'Just as in the tail of a cow some hair is short and some long, so too, some complete threads should be woven in मुख्यसंधि and others in प्रतिमुखसंधि and so on'

There may be a गमाङ्क, which should occur in the bulk of an act, having रङ्गद्वार, आनुव, रीज, फल e g in वास्तवनाट्य the गमाङ्क called सीताम्बुजद्वार

### Remarks

It will be seen that all the theorists follow implicitly the outlines of the technique as detailed by NS, making only very minor changes. In spite of the details seen in DR or BP or ND which are not found in NS, it will be at once noted that these later texts merely elaborated upon the materials found in NS, never showing a fundamental departure from the principles recognised therein. Even ब्रह्म and others, when quoted, show themselves in general agreement with NS. SD perhaps stands alone in recognising the गमाङ्क, though as early a drama as त्रिवर्गिका uses this device. MTR would, at first, seem to hold a distinct view when he allows an imaginary admixture in plot, but, most probably it only means, as seen in DR, that the poet had certain liberty of making adjustments in the original story.

But सुबन्धु, as quoted by शारदानन्द, seems to preserve some distinct tradition, probably unknown to NS or at least not recognised therein. The five types of dramas as detailed by सुबन्धु, show a fairly elaborate development in dramaturgical technique as well as in practice.

### 2 प्रकरण

NS (XVIII, 93-105) Plot should be imaginary and all that is said about the body of the

drama etc, under नाटक, should be applied to प्रकरण, too Life-story of a ब्राह्मण or a minister or a merchant or a priest or an अमात्य or a सार्थवाह is woven in it There should be no उदात्त hero, no divine element, no kingly luxury It should have all the बाधजन्य, having दास, विट, धेष्टि, also more of वेश्य and less of कुलजी, but where there is a story of a सचिव, ब्राह्मण, पुरोहित धेष्टि, अमात्य or सार्थवाह, there should be no वेश्या and if at all there is a वेश्या, there should be no कुलजा

There may be five to ten acts

DR (3, 44-45) Hero should be either an अमात्य or a विप्र or a वणिक् he should be धीरप्रशान्त in nature, fallen on bad days and ready to do a good turn Heroine may be a कुलजा, वेश्या or both The former must always stay in the inner apartments and the latter outside and they should not cross one another प्रकरण is threefold according as the heroine is कुलजा, वेश्या, or both

Examples DR (avaloka) वेश्या alone - तरङ्गदाता, कुलजा alone - पुण्ड्रवितकम्, both - मृष्टवटिकम्

ND (P 177 ff) notes that the hero may be धीरोदात्त or धीरप्रशान्त and remarks

यस्त्वमात्य नेतारमभ्युपगम्य धीरप्रशान्तनायकमिति प्रकरणे विशेषयति स मृष्टवटिप्रदायकम् । यदाहु - सेनापतिरमात्यश्च धीरोदात्तौ प्रकीर्तितौ - इति ।

The heroine may be low-born and hence appropriately the hero too, may be low-born ND argues that if in this case, the hero is high-born the incident in the drama पुण्ड्रवितकम्, wherein the mother-in-law, in the absence of her son, aban-

dons her daughter-in-law and the abandoned daughter-in-law stays at the house of रुक्मसेन, would be improper. So also, when the heroine is a वैद्या, even immodest manners may be allowed e. g. in विशाखदत्त's देवीचन्द्रगुप्तम् the utterance of कुमारचन्द्रगुप्त with reference to मायवसेना

आनन्दामृतल मित्रावल्लभेतराज्यता नेत्रयो  
प्रयत्नेषु वरान्ने पुलकित्यु स्वेद सनातनवते ।  
कुशलि निमन्त्रयार्हवत्त सन्निदाप्यसौ  
केनायम्कृताऽऽरोगे निवसन्निमन्त्रयान्त्वसित ॥

ND divides प्रकृता into seven types (which are also seen in KS) according as the hero or the result or the plot is imaginary. 1 Hero is imaginary and the other two famous. 2 Result is imaginary, 3 Plot is imaginary, 4 Hero and result are imaginary, 5 Hero and plot are imaginary, 6 Result and plot are imaginary and 7. All the three are imaginary. (N B whatever is not imaginary may be taken from some earlier poet or from stories like महाभारत) Then again, the heroine may be कुञ्जा, वैद्या, or both and thus the above seven types will yield 21 types. These, again, are pure if there is कुञ्जा or वैद्या only or mixed if there are both. Thus pure=14, mixed=7.

Here, too, it is pointed out that if the plot refers to a householder, there may be a कुञ्जा, as in पुष्पद्विगुप्त and if otherwise, a वैद्या only, as in तरङ्गदत्ता and if the hero is a विट like मूलदत्त (पद्मप्रभुनन्दम्?), both, but वैद्या, in the last case should be the chief heroine.

It wants the absence of the abundance of वैशिकी and points out that the fact that मालतीमाधव shows an abundance of वैशिकी, militates against वृद्धाभिषय

BP (P 241) notes that कुलजा should use Sanskrit and वैद्या Prakrit

SP enjoins only pure विश्वम्भर in a प्रकरण It says that विट, शर्कर, कुटिणी etc, चेट and others should always be there

**Examples** पद्मावतीपरिणय has विप्रचरित, मृच्छकटिक has वाग्विजय चरितम्, मालतीमाधव has कुलक्षत्री, तरङ्गवत्ता has गणिका and मृच्छकटिक has both SD takes मृच्छकटिक to have विप्रनायक, मालतीमाधव to have अमाल्यनायक and पुष्पदण्डिक to have a वणिक् hero

RS divides a प्रकरण into शुद्ध, धूर्त, and मिश्र मालतीमाधव having कुलक्षत्री is शुद्ध, वामदत्ता having गणिका is धूर्त and मृच्छकटिक having both is मिश्र

### Remarks

**मृच्छकटिक** The hero is a ब्राह्मण and yet both the कुलजा and वैद्या are seen in this drama which militates against the express injunction of NS, ND and others DR has this drama in view when it enjoins कुलजा to remain in the inner apartments and वैद्या outside The plot of the drama is imaginary except perhaps the last incident of आर्यर's revolt, which seems to have its basis in historical facts BP's injunction that कुलजा should speak in Sanskrit is not followed here

No element in मालतीमाधव goes against the theory as detailed above, though it has no विटवक्त्र or विट

and others, but these were evidently out of place in a *śūdr* type (according to ND) It should be noted that, here, too, *नाम्नी* resorts to Prakrit.

Keith considers *मास*'s *प्रतिज्ञा* to be a *प्रक्रम* (San D P 102), which as we have already pointed out is incorrect It seems that he has been led away by the word *प्रक्रम* in the *प्रस्तावना*, but there the term *प्रक्रम* is used in a generic sense Not a single essential condition of *प्रक्रम* is fulfilled by *प्रतिज्ञा*

### 3 नमस्कार

Def DR (avaloka) समवर्तीन्तेऽस्मिन्मथा इति नमस्कारः।

NS (XVIII, 109-122) It should start with *देवानुरा* having famous and noble hero An act may have 3 *कण्ट* (frauds), 3 *विद्रव* (disturbances) and 3 *युग्म*s, having 12 heroes and a duration of 18 *नटिका*s Every act must have *कण्ट*, *विद्रव*, *प्रहसन*, *वीर्य* First Act may have 12 *नटिका*s, second four and third two, which completes the action One *नटिका* is equal to  $\frac{1}{2}$  *मुहूर्त*

As to the subject-matter, *विद्रव* may be three-fold according as it is caused by (1) siege (2) fight or water (3) fire or elephant *कण्ट* may be three-fold according as it is caused by (1) fate (2) enemy (3) happiness or misery. *युग्म* may be three-fold according as it is caused by *घर्ष*, *अर्थ* and *बल*, which would be the respective aims of life.

*उत्पिङ्गु अनुष्टुप्* and the difficult metres (*उत्पिङ्गवानुष्टुप्* *कृत्तानि च यानि वन्यमुष्टुप्*) should be used in this type

DR (3,61) सधि except विमर्श इति मन्दैशिकी वीथ्यत्रस may be used profitably Plot famous, describing देवासुरा Heroes gods and demons, 12 रस वीर prominent Acts 3, First act may have two सधिस

KS (P 320) Plot It must contain gods and demons, the subject-matter being imaginary or famous कष्ट may be caused (1) when one guiltless is deceived by another (2) when the deceived one is also guilty (3) when both are not guilty, but deceit is caused accidentally According to some, there must be heroes and counter-heroes in each act An adjustment in the number of the heroes is allowed

ND (P 124) रस वीर and रौद्र. With regard to the division of the duration in each act it is noted

एके तु प्रत्यङ्कं यद्येदितद्विगुणं कालमानमाहुः ।

Metre सधरा etc, not गायत्री etc, but some allow गायत्री etc.

BP (P 248-250) notes that the first act should have the first two सधिस, second the first three सधिस and the third the four सधिस except विमर्श

Three varieties of शृंगार are thus explained (1) when erotic is resorted to only for procreating a son, otherwise practising vows etc, it is धर्मशृंगार (2) when erotic is indulged in for getting money, it is अर्थशृंगार and (3) when it is indulged in the company of another's wife, gambling, wine etc, it is कामशृंगार

SD follows BP in the matter of सधिस in each act



RS illustrates धर्मशृंगार by पार्वतीपरमेश्वर's love  
 Examples BP and others कृतमनन RS पदोचिनन्धन.  
 Remarks

There is one point in the above theory that draws our attention at once. मरु wants उर्जिह् and other difficult metres for this type ND, later as it is, wants सग्वरा and others pointing out at the same time that some allowed गज्जो etc ND, thus, allows only the classical metres, not the Vedic ones. Obvious inference from this would be that NS had in view some specimens which actually used उर्जिह् or other difficult Vedic metres. Does it refer to an earlier age when these Vedic metres were actually in vogue and therefore natural? NS mentions that a सनद्वार was performed before gods. It, at least, supports the above suggestion.

The injunction in BP and SD, according to which each act should have मन्त्रि commencing from सुनसन्धि is difficult to explain. Does it refer to three distinct incidents to be commenced and developed in each of these three acts and finally to bring about a connection and a fitting end of all these three? Compare in this connection ND (P 39) While discussing प्रवेष्ट etc, it is noted that they should not be employed even in सनद्वार.

सुदृष्टेऽपि सनद्वारस्य परस्परसम्बन्धाद्वादादपरां तु . .etc

This distinctly states that in सनद्वार acts were not connected with one another.

Keith considers पदराज of मलय, (out of the earlier

dramas) to make the nearest approach to समवकार but it should be remembered that in समवकार, story of gods and demons is essential, and that though in पद्मरात्र, fraud is seen in the first act and disturbance in all the three, no गुह्य is seen all throughout the drama. At the same time it is noteworthy that भ्रातृ, who otherwise uses simple verses, has used many difficult classical verses in this drama.

It will be seen that समवकार, डिम, and व्यययोग are all alike, more or less, and पद्मरात्र exhibits all the characteristics of व्यययोग as described by NS, DR and BP, except that it has three acts and difficult verses, which, however, would be quite natural in a type which essentially represents haughty रस. May this not suggest a transitional stage?

#### 4. डिम

Def DR (avaloka) because it involves the procedure of injuring on the part of the hero - डिम being equivalent to सचत 'injuring', KS notes that डिम, डिम्य and विद्व are synonymous, and because विद्व is present here, it is called डिम

NS (XVIII, 129-134) Plot renowned, Hero 16, renowned and उदात्त Acts 4 रस Except erotic and humourous, all the haughty रस वृत्ति सात्वती and आरम्भ There may be fight, tugging, magical illusion, many males, gods, serpents, राक्षस, यक्ष, and cyclonic accidents

DR (3, 59) वृत्ति except वैशिष्टी सधि 4., void of विभक्ति

Examples BP. कनोदरा, नारकोदरा SD NS DR  
त्रिपुरदाह RS वीरमदविजृम्भान्

### 5 ईहामृग

Def DR (valoka) This kind of drama is called ईहामृग because in it the hero pursues (ईह) a woman as unattainable as a gazelle (मृग) KS ईहा चेष्टा भृगुमदेव स्त्रीनामनाम दत्त

NS (XVIII, 124-128) Plot A divine hero and a divine lady Haughty males, becoming angry for the sake of a lady, causing सयोम, सन्देह गुण may be caused by the capture of the heroine Whatever heroes, रस, वृत्ति are in व्यायोग, the same should be here, only here the union of the hero with the heroine should be effected

DR (3,64) Plot: mixed सचि 3 नाटक and प्रतिनायक my be divine or human, both being famous, परियेदन and the latter may loose his end by improper acts A semblence of love on the part of the one who tries to obtain divine woman against her will by capture etc , may be presented

KS (P 322) first quotes the NS passage wherein the following occurs

ईहामृगस्तु कार्यं मुमुक्षाहिनकान्दबन्धय ।  
यद्व्यायोगे कार्यं

and then comments upon it thus

कार्यसन्नेनाह उच्यते । तेन एक एताह ।

It, thus, allows only one act and twelve heroes

ND (P 131) wants वीर्यज्ञः Acts 1 or 4  
 Quarrel should be caused by a divine woman If  
 it has one act, the action must last for one day  
 only, if four, for four days,

SD Acts 1 or 4

Examples BP कुसुमसेखर, RS • मायादुरङ्ग, SD  
 कुसुमसेखरविजय

### Remarks

NS notes only one point of difference between  
 व्यायोग and ईहामृग, by saying that in the latter the  
 union with the heroine should be effected, which  
 would naturally suggest that in व्यायोग the union  
 should not be effected How, then, shall we classify  
 मध्यम of भास as a व्यायोग, in which union with the  
 heroine is effected ?

### 6. व्यायोग or व्यायाम

Def DR(avaloka) because in it men disagree  
 with one another (व्यायुज्यन्ते)

NS (XVIII, 135-137) Plot renowned Hero  
 renowned Act one Many males fight there as in  
 समवकार, but the number may not be the same : e  
 12 Hero may be divine or a king There must  
 be various kinds of fighting and it should be full  
 of haughty रसः

DR (3, 60) Hero ह्यतोदित संधि void of गर्भ and  
 निमर्श Plot Fighting not caused by a woman as in  
 the case of जामदग्न्यजय Action must last for one  
 day only

KS (P 323) notes that it is like a sequel (शेषभूत) to विम By 'few females' he takes it to be void of heroine etc, but allows maids to be present It is once called व्यायान here

BP (P 248) Hero धीरोद्भूत There may be 3,4 or 5 but never more than ten heroes It should have a विष्कम्भक कृति भारती and आरमदी

Examples DR and ND\* जामदग्न्यजय RS धनञ्जयजय SD, सौमन्धिकहरण N B one सौमन्धिकहरण published by Nirnaya Sagar Press is a प्रेक्षाक and not a व्यायोग It, therefore, seems that there were two dramas of the same name

### Remarks

That मध्यम of भास should not be taken as a व्यायोग has been already suggested by us under ईदमृग Very close relations between समवकार, ईदमृग, विम and व्यायोग are apparent from the theory

### 7. अङ्क or उत्सृष्टिकाङ्क

Def DR(avaloka) It is called उत्सृष्टिकाङ्क (instead of merely अङ्क) for the purpose of distinguishing it from the अङ्क (act) included in a play KS (P 324): one which is characterised by women who are grieving i e whose sight, life and breath are about to flee away (उत्क्रमन्नुक्ता दृष्टिर्जीवित प्राणा यात्रा ता उत्सृष्टिका शोचन्त स्त्रियस्तामिरहित इति तदोक्त ) ND quotes KS

NS (XVIII, 138-145) Plot renowned but rarely imaginary Heroes ordinary persons, not divine रत्न वरुण (chief) No fight etc, and full of the wailings of women कृति भारती

NS has a note that whenever a fight of a divine hero is represented, it should be so done in भारतवर्ष, for all the land therein is charming, fragrant and golden there is constant joy in the form of love-sports of ladies in garden etc (I think that this does not refer to अङ्क only but to all the forms of drama, otherwise the condition about the divine hero would directly militate against the above injunction that there should be no divine hero in an अङ्क)

DR (3, 63) has a note that there may be युद्ध as well as victory and defeat by speech only

ND (P 130 ff) Act 1, as the action must be over in one day

BP (P 251) वृत्ति सात्वती and आरभरी Act one according to Bharata, two according to केदाल and three according to व्यासाजनेयगुरु सवि सुख and निर्द्वन्द्व according to केदाल Here is a note that usually death should not be represented on the stage, but if the dead one is going to be revived, it may be allowed Revival is illustrated as follows In रामानुजाद्वय of लक्ष्मणमेन, in नागानन्द, of जीमूतवाहन, moreover death of mortals by divine persons, (as of the sons of सगर by वसिष्ठ as in गङ्गासगीरय) should be suggested in प्रवेशदृश्य (thus explains दृश्य the word 'भारतवर्ष' in NS)

Examples SD शर्मिष्ठायाति, RS अङ्ककुण्डला

### 8 प्रहसन

NSj (XVIII, 146-150) It is divided into two kinds - शुद्ध and प्रदीर्घ It (शुद्ध) should be arranged with humorous speeches of भगवन् तापस्य, विप्र and

others, having क्युप्यः thus it should be full of humorous speeches, having no विह्वल language, poems full of भाव etc, with the plot moving on to a fixed goal प्रदीर्घ has hataerae, servants, eunuchs parasites deceitful persons and बन्धु and is full of coarse dress, gesture etc

Popular story or a story full of दम may be woven in a प्रहसन, having धूर्तकविवाद It may have वीर्यद्वय.

DR (3,55-58) divides it into three kinds as - शुद्ध, विह्वल and संदीर्घ शुद्ध is the same as in NS विह्वल is प्रदीर्घ of NS and संदीर्घ, here, is accepted as a distinct kind as it has वीर्यद्वय रस sixfold हास्य

KS (P 324) explains the अविविक्तभावाचार of NS as not being विह्वल i.e असम्य and अष्टील

ND (P 128) notes that it should have मधि, वृत्ति and act as in भाग

SD allows संदीर्घ to have two acts

RS says that it should have the following ten elements (which are not the वीर्यद्वय as given by others) अवलम्बित, अवलम्ब, व्यवहार, विप्रलम्भ, उपपत्ति, भय, अवृत्त, विप्रलम्ब, गदाद्वय and प्रलय Each one of these is defined and illustrated.

Examples BP सैन्धिका - संदीर्घ, सागरकोसुदी - शुद्ध and कलिङ्ग - विह्वल, SD रुद्रपर्व - शुद्ध, धूर्तचरित - संदीर्घ and लटकमेल्क - संदीर्घ with two acts. RS आनन्दकोश

Remarks :

NS requires भगवत् etc, in the शुद्ध type: now भगवत् is a very unusual term in [this connection.

Can it refer to any actual प्रदशन which had a भगवत् as a character, as in भगवद्बुक्तम्, or does it refer to that play itself ?

**दामरुप्रदशन** This is a peculiar piece arranged much after the fashion of धनञ्जयविजय, with which it shares the feature of wholesale borrowings from various writers. The piece itself is the main incident about दामरु, covers only three printed pages. Two more pieces, as short as half a printed page each, are appended to the first one. Last two pieces present no हास्य. In the first piece, दामरु is a genuine imitation of a निद्रक as in स्वप्नरासदत्तम् and others.

No one can seriously call this a प्रदशन. Of course, it opens with all the *eclat* of a प्रस्तावना, but the rest is merely reminiscent of the dialogues and monologues in our present-day school-gatherings. Might not these three pieces have served the same purpose in an assembly of some king, just to divert him ? In that case, this play must have been enacted, at a time, not very remote from the composition of भाग्य-DRAMAS, for otherwise, many of the humorous hits contained herein, would have been lost upon the audience. As a matter of fact, the हास्य in this small piece is evoked only by the conscious imitation of the funny expressions seen in the dramas of भाग्य and others, and much of it would, certainly, be lost upon an audience which was not well-conversant with those dramas.

If this drama was ever treated as a प्रदशन, it



must have been in very ancient days indeed, as its technique is simplicity itself. It is completely written in Sanskrit, which may classify it as a *śūdr* type. No extant theorist presupposes such a specimen, and no recent dramatist, after the strong conventions created by these theorists, would even dream of composing such a piece.

Most certainly it is not the 14th drama of *अन*, as Mr. Ramakṛṣṇa Kavī suggests; its very nature precludes it from being designated as an independent drama. It is merely a selection of scenes or half-scenes from various dramas for the diversion of some patron.

*नाट्यारप्रहसन*. This, too, may not be considered as a representative specimen of the *प्रहसन* as detailed by our theorists. It divides itself into two *सर्ग*s, instead of acts. The incidents narrated in both these are absolutely unconnected with one another, and though one or two characters of the first *सर्ग* are repeated in the second *सर्ग*, the thread of the story is not the same. This feature, it will be seen, is common to *दाम्प्रहसन* too, and though the present one has better claims for being regarded as a play, its technique is loose and does not conform, at places, to the rules laid down by NS and others. It resembles in nature more to the popular dramatical spectacles like *रामलीला* and *भक्त*, for there are certain features present here, which are not seen in any of the extant Sanskrit dramas, nor are they mentioned as admissible by any theorist. For illustration *निर्वाह* says "Oh *कृष्ण*,

narrate the पुराण", even when no वरट is present on the stage. But वरट enters on hearing these words of the chieftain. Thus these entrances and exits are so abrupt and at times so unwarranted that they indicate an open-air theatre.

In the प्रस्तावना, only the सूत्रधार figures and he carries on his monologue by resorting to आशयभाषित which is remarkable.

But why are the incidents in the two संधिs unconnected as far as the thread of the story goes? We have seen this feature to be present in समवहार and it seems to be reminiscent of a time when these spectacles were performed just for diversion. Of course, this will be a specimen of the सरीर्ग type as it is so coarse.

**लटकमेढक** This is a coarser type of प्रहसन which would therefore be classified as प्रसिर्ग according to the rules laid down by NS.

प्रस्तावना in this प्रहसन is, on the whole, regular as it shows all the necessary features - like giving the title and the name of the drama and the author etc., - but it is peculiar in so far as it has सूत्रधार alone present on the stage, throughout the प्रस्तावना. There is one very peculiar feature in these coarser types of प्रहसन. As noted before, entrances of the characters are either abrupt or are announced beforehand, not in the course of the conversation that might precede but by special verses recited in नेपथ्य. In this drama there are several occasions when this has happened. See pp

5, 6, etc On page 7 the following is seen.

सना.— कुलव्याधे, सनाह्विता जन्तुकेतुनामा महावैद्य ।

कुल —(जन्तुकेतुनाह्वय)

This shows that कुलव्याधि did not actually leave the stage but called aloud keeping his place on the stage It should be remembered that the physician was not supposed to be in any adjoining room, from where he was to be called, but he was to be called from his house such a device for the purpose is both crude and unusual See also pp 12, 14, 17, 20, 21

हास्यार्णव This too, is a वकीर्ण type and shows the same features about the entrances of the characters. See pp 22, 23

मत्तविलान This is a specimen of the शुद्ध type and as the nature of the शुद्ध type requires, does not show any indecent language or low taste as is the case with the above four प्रदम्भs Though the chief characters in this drama are a कामनिष्ठ and his wife, the plot is pleasant without being coarse Of course, it is not as exalted as भगवदञ्जुक्म्, but genuine mirth is excited by the clever situation created by the author

भगवदञ्जुक्म् This प्रदम्भ seems to represent the शुद्ध type, inspite of its having a गणिका as a character This गणिका, like वसन्तसेना of मृच्छकटिक, is a lady as noble as a कुलजा and seems to be as consistent in her love as her namesake. The whole piece has an exalted air about it Even in the conver-

sation between the teacher and the pupil, there is nothing that may be termed coarse. It is a masterpiece of simple technique and plot-structure. It is easily the best of our प्रहसन. The गणिका is a lady of accomplishments and refined taste and does not show any lower traits like the common harlots that figure in नाटकाट or लटफ़मेलक or हास्यार्णव.

I have noted above that the presence of गणिका in this प्रहसन, may constitute a difficulty in calling it a प्रहसन of the शुद्ध type, but the गणिका as represented here, is a lady of culture and accomplishments and does not present any traits of a वैशखी as such. Her constant love for रामलोक raises her to the level of a कुलजा. Moreover, the भगवत् seems to be the chief character in this drama, the गणिका turns up incidentally and provides a suitable incident for the development of the drama. Thus we can call it a शुद्ध type. It has no निहितभाषा (in the sense of KS), the love throughout is exalted and the humour is not excited by dull and vulgar catch-phrases but by genuine witticism and in the last portion by the funny situation created by the exchange of souls. Stage-setting suggests the usual classical Sanskrit theatre and not an open-air square as is the case in other प्रहसन.

Mention in NS that a शुद्ध type may have भगवत्, तापस etc., has been already noted as peculiar. In this drama the teacher is addressed as भगवत् and the title of the drama bears witness to the importance of his character. The word भगवत् occurs about 10 times in this small piece. May

it not be that the NS passage in question refers to this play? That this drama seems to belong to an earlier period is indicated by many traits present therein

### 9 भाण

NS (XVIII, 151-154) divides भाण into two types according as the hero describes his own experiences or those of others but it should be carried on by one character only

There must be speeches in the air, with fitting histrionics There must be वृत्ते, विट and others पदाङ्ग in the text would be better emended as पदाङ्ग, which is actually the reading in KS (P 325), which has borrowed these verses bodily from here

DR (3, 53) One expert विट describes vile incidents experienced by himself or by others, by means of speeches in the air, by addressing (an imaginary person) and answering himself He should suggest वीर and शूरा, by describing valour and beauty respectively, mostly resorting to मारुती style Act 1 Plot imaginary मण्डित सुख and निर्वहण with their sub-divisions Ten sorts of लम्बाङ्ग are in place

KS (P 325) remarks that this type is mostly for the diversion of the ordinary people (वृक्षजन)

ND (P. 127) adds that it is popular it should have शूरा predominant, also वीर and हस्य may receive subordinate treatment It should have only one act, for the action must last only

for one day There should be वाचिनाभिनय only, not सात्विक or आदिक Here, some want imaginary story and वित्त to be a hero

BP (P 244) mentions the view of वेङ्कट and others about भाष which differs from the above in only one point that it should have यत्न only (शृङ्गारैकरसाश्रयम्) This is also the opinion of भोज

Examples. RS शृङ्गारमञ्जरी is the chief illustration as it exhibits all the ten नाट्याङ्गसः SD लीलामञ्जरी

### Remarks

पद्मप्राभूतकम् The स्वप्ना is peculiar In it the सूत्रधार recites five consecutive verses without even one line in prose The first verse being a benedictive stanza has the character of the usual नान्दी Other four stanzas describe the vernal season Even at the end of the fifth verse there is no indication of any character entering Throughout the स्वप्ना only the सूत्रधार is on the stage, and no other character like मारिय is introduced to carry on the dialogue about the usual matters of the name of the drama etc, nor does the सूत्रधार himself supply the information

It treats of शृङ्गार only, having no suggestion of वीर or हास्य

Though the वित्त indulges in smart conversation with different hataerae, most portion is taken up by him in talking to his friends whom he meets and who are in one or the other way connected with the various hataerae

There are only two सधिस and one act

It has no भक्तवत्सल्य nor a stanza which can take the place of one

धूर्तमित्रसंवाद It has no नाट्यी verse, or one which can take its place, as a benedictory verse. रसगन्ता is direct, short and to the point Only the मूकवार enters who in his speech addresses his wife as आर्त even when she is not on the stage, and urges her to sing in praise of monsoon Then he himself sings one verse describing monsoon but no नटि enters and no verse is put in her mouth This is rather queer It may be that मूकवार is supposed to resort to आकाशभाषिण, though there is no response like 'किं ब्रवीषि'

There is शृंगार only

विट, here, goes to the वैद्यनाथ, but talks to only one or two hataerae and then discusses certain principles regarding the conduct of वैद्यस and such other allied subjects, all of which seems to be a faithful illustration of उक्तिप्रयुक्ति, for all the while the two friends are strolling in the गैरीशान and discussing these subjects. There is almost no dramatic technique As a matter of fact there is no plot One cannot distinguish between सुख and निर्वहण It is merely an incident that happens to a विट, who feeling anxious, moves out and going into the वैद्यनाथ without any set purpose, begins to discuss the subjects with his friend who happens to meet him It is very peculiar

उभयाभिभाषिका it has शृंगार only It is much simpler in technique than the later भाष्य and yet

forms a model for the later ones, as it describes a ण्ट starting out to bring about a union between two lovers who had been separated due to some misunderstanding. On the way, he comes across six hatrae and converses with them in his clever manner.

पादताडितम् It treats of शत्र only

शत्राभूषण, रसमदन, शत्रारतिरु, शत्रारसर्ग and सुकुन्दानन्द are all alike in nature and reveal the set type, showing two सच, one ण्ट, predominance of शत्र, suggestion of Heroic and most of the लास्या. सुकुन्दानन्द is called a मिश्रभाण in its प्रस्तावना but no such division of भाण is known to our extant theory. What is it? Does it refer to the mixture of Sanskrit and Prakrit? It is there. Also see further under भाण-उपरूपक.

कूर्पूरचरित has only Heroic and resembles चतुर्भाणी in technique.

It will be seen that the only fundamental difference between the earlier and later theorists is about रस, earlier exponents (like Kohala and others) requiring शत्र only and the later writers allowing Heroic, too. This must actually refer to general development of this type of drama, and the fact that all the four भाण published in चतुर्भाणी show शत्र only and no suggestion of Heroic at any stage, may go to prove their priority to DR and other later works.

### 10 टीची

Def DR (avaloka) because it is like a



वीथी i e a street or a series of sub-divisions  
ND वक्रोक्तिमार्गेण गमनाद् वीथीव वीथी (P. 132)

NS (XVIII, 155-166) Act 1. It should have one or two actors only It should have the 13 वीथ्यङ्गस

DR (3, 62) इति कैमिदी मयि and अद् as in मां रस गृह्यार to be suggested and others may be touched It should have one or two characters

KS (P 325) interprets the एकद्वयं and द्विद्वयं of NS as having one or two actors and notes that in the case of one actor speeches may be carried on by questions and answers

ND (P 132) All heroes, all रस मयि मुख and निर्वहण It, at this stage, quotes कौटिल्य's definition of वीथी

उत्तमायनन्यभिर्मुक्ता द्रष्टृनिमित्त्रिणा ।

एकद्वयं द्विद्वयं वा सा वीथीति (त्यभि) मद्रिणा ॥

Thus कौटिल्य allows all sorts of heroes here यद्गुह, it is here pointed out, does not desire अन्य heroes in वीथी and reserves them for प्रकरण, भाग etc.

BP (P 251) first lays down that वीथ्यङ्गस as well as लम्बाङ्गस are proper here and then notes that कौटिल्य allows option about रास्याङ्गस, while मेख positively prescribes them on account of गृह्यार being the prominent रस

RS: Heroine सामान्या or परकीया but कुलजा is not proper

Examples BP. वक्रवीथी, द्रष्टृलेखा etc SD मातृवीथी RS मातृवरीथी

CHAPTER IV  
*EVOLUTION OF RŪPAKAS*

## CHAPTER IV

### EVOLUTION OF RŪPAKAS

I have already suggested that नाटक and प्रकाश are the two types of full-fledged drama, into which all the other types gradually developed. It is, now, easier for us to consider this suggestion. The details of the various individual types of *काव्य* that we have gathered here from different sources, give us a fairly definite idea about the nature of each one of these. From a comparative study of these details, it follows that there runs a common thread between all these types, showing their inter-connections. Let us dwell upon this a little.

The first and foremost criterion in this regard, is the number of acts<sup>1</sup>. It will be seen that there are five types which may be designated as

1. Compare the following view expressed by Prof. K. H. Dhruva, in his Introduction to the Gujarati translation of *काव्य* (P. 22A) : 'In the gradual evolution of dramas one-act drama is the original type. Ancient sages being free from the daily programme of their rituals resorted to it as an innocent means of diversion. This drama of the 6th century B. C. was a one-act drama and was entirely composed in Sanskrit. At this age (i. e. at a later age when the one-act drama had evolved into a form having many acts) certain professional actors would perform their dramas before the *काव्य*s of the town but for household purposes one-act play was always welcome. The short interval of dusk being fixed for such performances, lengthy dramas with many acts had no scope for their domestic life.'

one-act dramas, and it is easily understood that one-act dramas, being simple in structure, are the most primitive types of dramatic forms, from which other complicated types must have evolved भाग वीथी, अङ्क, प्रहसन and व्ययोग should have, according to the unanimous sanction of all the theorists, only one act. Let us distinguish between these and find out if there are any threads, suggestive of a serial evolution or mutual connection. Out of these five varieties, भाग is at once, distinct by its having only one actor. All other forms presuppose dialogue, while भाग is essentially based on monologue and to obviate the difficulty of its being rendered monotonous by having no उक्तिप्रत्युक्ति, the ingenious method of आकाशभाषित is adopted. This makes the performance lively and audience interested. Thus, this essentially monologous form combines the elements of dialogue into its very structure, without which it would be reduced to the state of १ वृत्तप्रकार. This monologous nature of भाग, combined with the fact that it was allowed only one act, shows its primitive nature. वीथी is a mere variant of भाग with which it has many features in common. Both have one act. भाग has erotic रस, so has वीथी. लास्याङ्ग are allowed in both the cases. भाग was *par excellence* a hataerac drama. There are indications that वीथी, too, had such a nature. RS allows for वीथी, गामन्या or परकीया heroine, but no वृत्ता. So too, केहल allowed all heroes even अयन, though संतुष्ट does not want an अयन hero. This may suggest that वीथी, as it distinguished itself from भाग,

assumed a nobler role, discarding the coarser nature of *मात्र*. Another point in which *वीथी* differed from *मात्र*, as it developed, is the fact that theory allows in it, one or two characters. KS well points out that in the case of its having one character, speeches in the air may be resorted to, and in the case of two characters, the story may be carried on by questions-and-answers. Thus the nature of *वीथी*, as described in our extant dramaturgical works is transparent enough to show how it has developed from a type like *मात्र*. Take out two characters and *उत्साहि* heroes and you have *मात्र* and add to *मात्र* these two features and you have *वीथी*.

Then the art takes a step further. People became familiar with forms of drama, having more characters than one. Artists could see that this gave richness and variety to the drama, and they soon adopted this feature. It was at such a time that *मात्र* gave rise to *प्रहसन* and *वीथी* to *अह*. The coarser side of *मात्र*, stressing the humorous side of the plot and subordinating *यत्न*, gave rise to *प्रहसन* while *वीथी*, stressing the tragic side

2. *प्रहसन*s have been distinguished as *दुह* and *महर्ष* and though, in the main they conform to the rules of our dramaturgy, the extant *महर्ष* types present some intrinsic features which are never seen in other extant dramas or in our theory. We have already noted that the *महर्ष* type shows a queer peculiarity about the entrances of the characters. It seems that a character entered in three different manners. Sometimes, a character before it actually entered the stage was announced in one of

of life created अङ्ग These changed their श्रुति as it suited their subject-matter व्यायोग differed from these types only in one point that it should have fight etc, in the plot

It must be noted that अङ्ग, प्रहसन, and व्यायोग can have any number of characters and this feature being a definite advance on माण and वीथी, prepared the ground for further development of the drama With many actors to play the role of various characters in a plot, it was easy to extend the action from one act to many acts Thus

two verses Sometimes, without any indication in the conversation between characters already present on the stage, a character 'would be introduced by the stage-direction - प्रविश्य - in spite of there being no haste or emergency for such a procedure Sometimes again, a character already present on the stage would call aloud another character who is not supposed to be in the vicinity, as in अटक्केटक All these three ways are unusual They presuppose an open air theatre such as a temple court-yard, without almost any stage setting Such a feature of entrances is actually present to day in our popular rustic spectacles like भगई in Gujarat It, therefore, to my mind, refers to a lower development of the dramatic technique This trait, combined with the fact that this type of प्रहसन, caters for the coarser taste of the low class people, may suggest that this सर्वांग type may have been earlier to evolve than the युद्ध type

- 3 It will be seen that the period of one act dramas had no need of a word for 'act' अङ्क at that time designated a particular type of drama, but later on when this type अङ्क fell into disuse and when complicated dramas developed, it came to mean an act

arose more types, showing a plot extending over many days and involving many characters, thus necessitating more acts. त्रिन, ईहानुग and सनवद्धर arose at such a period. ईहानुग is a direct development of व्याना. NS has a general note that whatever heroes, वृत्त and रस are in व्याना, they should be present in ईहानुग too, only that here the union with the heroine should be effected. Thus ईहानुग with its four acts, is an elaboration of व्याना<sup>1</sup>, which has only one act. Of course there is some distinction in plot between these two. त्रिन too, is a variant of व्याना. Both त्रिन and ईहानुग should have haughty रस. Heroes are many in व्याना. व्याना represents scenes of mild fights, while त्रिन has terrible fights and disorders of every sort. सनवद्धर also is akin to व्याना and त्रिन. It culminates in haughty रस, having cyclonic disturbances etc., but it also shows the relieving feature in the form of गुहागुह which should form a thread<sup>2</sup> of the plot. Elaborate instructions about plot-arrangement (e. g. three different threads in three sections yielding in all nine threads) show that out of these eight varieties, this form of drama-सनवद्धर – was the most complicated one. सनवद्धर with 12 heroes, 3 कवयः, 3 वृत्तः, 3 रसः, and with its duration of 18 नाटिकाः, had reached a point of development which soon led to the standard types – नाटक and प्रकरण.

It may be argued that प्रहसन may have been

4. That KS and SD allow even one act to ईहानुग clearly shows its nearness to त्रिन.

the first type to evolve and भाण might have been developed from it by the process of condensation, for both these types show the following features

भाण	प्रहसन
(1) one actor	(1) many actors
(2) आकाशमणित	(2) no आकाशमणित
(3) one act	(3) two acts

Thus either प्रहसन may be taken as an elaboration of the original भाण or भाण may be taken as a condensation of प्रहसन. For, natural growth takes place both ways (1) towards a greater simplicity by analysis or (2) towards a greater complexity by synthesis i.e. by additions, reduplications, joining various threads etc.

But it is enough to point out that condensation of many actors into one is neither more artistic nor more convenient nor more natural and भाण by this feature alone is fully entitled to be taken as the first type to evolve. It is, however, possible that two distinct kinds of spectacles one embodying monologue and the other dialogue might have run parallel in the course of evolution, monologue having stopped at भाण and वीथी, while the dialogue developed into the higher types. But against this militate the number of acts, low theme of the subject-matter etc., in a प्रहसन. ऋग्वेद shows both monologue and dialogue, but from the dramaturgical development as seen in our dramaturgical books, it is safer to presume that while both these forms of representation



were known to the society, monologous form was the first to be resorted to as a regular dramatic form, from which other forms developed as shown above. At any rate, I suggest that we take *भगवद्गीता* as our first dramatic evolute as a working basis and at the end of this volume, we shall see how this working basis stands.

It is at least clear that *नाटक* and *प्रकरण* presuppose these types and must have developed from them. *ईदम्* and *दिन* stop at four acts. *नाटक* and *प्रकरण* with more elaborate setting, would require more acts and are allowed five to ten acts. Explicit instructions that a *प्रकरण* should have no *उद्गम* hero, no divine element, no kingly grandeur, but should have all the *बाह्य*s, having *राज*, *विद*, also more of *वैद्य* and less of *कुल*, show that this type preserves the coarser and more popular side of life, as represented in *भाग*, *प्रहसन* etc. Of course, as it was a full-fledged type, having the sanction of critics, and theorists, it had an alternative of having *कुल* as a heroine and a *बाह्य* etc., as a hero. But the very sanction that it can have a *सामान्य* as a heroine, and the clear mention in NS that it must have more of *वैद्य*, leave no doubt whatsoever about its coarser nature. *नाटक*, on the other hand, was the literary drama *par excellence*. It combined and sublimated the elements seen in *बाह्य*, *अह*, *दिन*, *ईदम्* and *समन्वय* and yet added an individuality of its own. It can have *राज*, *यज्ञ* or *वीर* as a predominant *राज*. Its plot must be renowned, which would make the

hero a noble character NS notes that it may depict the life-incidents of a king or it may have a divine hero and it should have grandeur, luxury and prosperity of every kind DR goes further into details and requires the hero to be full of noble qualities, noble and calm, powerful, desirous of fame, highly energetic, preserver of वेदs, and of a famous descent All this shows that नाटक was the drama of the upper classes of the society, that it was the ideal perfection to which this class of literary and artistic presentation could attain, that it was amongst plays what a महाकाव्य was amongst poems

Thus a common thread runs through all these types and a serial evolution of नाटक and प्रकरण from the earlier types is indicated But if this thesis is correct, the statement—नाटकप्रकरणद्वयम् etc., — seen in भगवद्गुणम् would directly militate against it, for it clearly states that other types have sprung from नाटक and प्रकरण But this should not hamper us Indian mind has always been slow to recognise historical evolution and when once नाटक and प्रकरण became fixed types of full-fledged dramas, it became quite natural for an ordinary reviewer to suppose that the lesser types had sprung from them That नाटक was accepted as the drama proper is seen in its treatment in all the text-books of Sanskrit Dramaturgy They invariably start with नाटक, describe all the details necessary for a नाटक and then merely give the points of distinctions in which other types differ from it other points

remaining common. This practice of treating नाटक as the drama proper and other types as its variants, is as old as NS. It would be seen that the theorists, for the sake of brevity and convenience, would resort to such a method. It would be far more convenient to describe the full-fledged type first and then to note down the differences in the case of other types, than the other way. This practice, adopted by all, would lend colour to the belief that the other types had sprung from नाटक. This would thus explain the reference in भगवद्-गुणम्

Moreover, as the fully fledged types of नाटक and प्रकरण came to be fully grasped and gained in popularity, new dramatists would attempt to compose more and more plays of these types, the composition of new plays of the lower types would cease to be attractive, the older ones (of the lower types) already there in the literature would also gradually lose in popularity and only the best or the most widely known amongst them would be preserved. This will explain the fact that we do not get very early specimens of one-act plays, which I have assumed to be the earliest bases of the later developed types. Thus it is that we do not possess earlier specimens of नाग, प्रहसन, वीदी etc. Of course, we can never be positive in the matter, for we know too little of the plays of the lower types that might have once existed. And yet there is some evidence to show

a wider prevalence of these one-act plays in the earlier days. In Appendix I, I have given a list of the dramas as quoted by our extant dramaturgical works. But even here there is a handicap. The dramaturgical texts from which we get these data, date from the 10th century downwards, for, the earliest amongst these are DR and Abh. However, these lists will give some idea of the extent to which these different types had developed.

Moreover we have seen that in earlier times the common term for drama was नाट्य and when नाट्य was separating itself from the वृत्त-type, no new terminology must have been created all at once. We shall see further that most of the eight types of रूप (and even प्रकरण) are traceable to some vulgar वृत्त or वृत्त type and as these types went on transforming themselves into नाट्य types, the new types were also designated by the older terms (cf भाण and its variants)<sup>5</sup> and it was only after the नाट्य types had fully developed into प्रकरण and नाटक that an attempt to give them a dramatic terminology must have been made. Till then, all that was dramatic was either नाट्य or नाटक प्रकरण, too,

- 5 Out of the terms designating the five one-act plays, at least three ईर्ष्या, प्रहसन and भाण most probably, existed earlier than the time of the evolution of our first dramatic type भाण as a form of mere वृत्त is known to SR. प्रहसन and ईर्ष्या as नाट्यका are known to NS. This means that the sense of these terms have changed, elementary idea denoted by the terms remaining as the predominant feature of the later dramatic types designated by them.

seems to have been used in a generic sense. Later on, they saw the full-fledged type of नाटक and relegated all other types to the subordinate class. This seems to be the reason of the rather loose terminology about the types of drama in earlier times \*

- 6 One point of distinction may be noted with regard to these types. Just as there were different रूपाः prescribed for different types so also the subject-matter varied according to the different types. An analysis shows that out of the five one-act dramas मय्य प्रहसन and गीर्षी should have imaginary plots and ~~यः~~ should have renowned plot but it is allowed an imaginary one on occasions. ~~ग्रीष्मी~~ has renowned plot ईहावन समवहार and डिम which are the developments of ~~मय्य~~ have renowned plots. This may suggest that our drama was secular and resorted to myths history and divine legends as it developed but of this later. That different रूपाः were prescribed for different types will be seen from the following also (Abh II P 450-I) —

इदंनिह नामास्व—य एते उत्पृष्टिकादयो रूपकमेदा ते तावदेकरसा रव,  
 यद्यपि नाटकादयोऽप्येवमेव । तथाहि सर्वरसनागमनायामपि नाटके प्रकरणे  
 च धनार्थादिवीर एव प्रधान परमार्थतः सर्वेषु नाटकमेवैषु वीरत्वानुगम-  
 दर्शनान् । समवहार तु यद्यपि हि शृङ्गारादित्वनुक्तं तथापि वीर एव  
 प्रधानं रीतिं वा, डिमन्यादागयारप्येवम् । ईहाश्चोऽपि रौद्रप्राधान्यमेव,  
 नाटिकाया तु शृङ्गार एव प्रधानम् । एव तावद् वीररीद्रशृङ्गारा यथास्व  
 [किं] पुनर्येवमग्राभूत्त्वेन वर्तमाना एतेषु प्रयोगेषु शान्तपीमन्तरसो तु

चरमपुमर्थयोगात्तत्र च तस्य नाधिकारोऽपि कम्यचिदपधिमज्जन्मनोऽ-  
धिकारान्नाटके यद्यपि तत्फलप्रधानतया प्राधान्यमवलम्बेयाता तथापि नासौ  
प्रचुरप्रयोग इति तथे। पुष्पार्थप्रप्रप्रणितायारपि वीरगदिरसान्तराध्या-  
वापनाप्रस्थापनम् । एन तात्पुमर्थगिपयो रूपकरसविषय एन परमार्थ,  
तथापि त्वितितृत्तवैतत्यादसान्तरप्रयोगेऽपि तदङ्गतया तत्र भवति । एव  
तत्प्रधानचेष्टायोगादुत्तिवैचित्र्यमलोचितमेव । उत्सृष्टिकाङ्क्षप्रहसनभागास्तु  
कण्ठहास्यविस्मयप्रधानत्वाद् रञ्जरमप्रधाना, तत एवात्र स्त्रीबालमूर्खा-  
दिरधिशरी ।

CHAPTER V  
*DERIVATIVE TYPES*





## CHAPTER V DERIVATIVE TYPES

I consider the following types as derivative types i.e. types that are later than and derived from the full-fledged नाटक and प्रकरण. There is some evidence to corroborate this view and I shall consider the same at the end of this section. Let us first see the traits of these types as recognised in theory

### 1 नाटी or नाटिका

NS (XVIII, 106-168). A mixture of the plot of नाटक and प्रकरण causes what is called नाटी. It must have many females, four acts, graceful histrionics well-arranged अङ्गs, profuse song, dance and music and erotic enjoyment. A king may act there: it should represent anger, conciliation and दम्न. It must have नायक, देवी and परिजनस

Abh. (NS G O S vol II P. 435ff)

By well-arranged अङ्गs अभिनव understands the अङ्गs of कैशिकी. अभिनव has some discussion about the heroine in नाटिका. According to him रत्नचन्द्रा should refer to the younger heroine and ~~रत्नचन्द्रा~~ <sup>रत्नचन्द्रा</sup> should refer to the देवी. Following ~~नाटिका~~ <sup>नाटिका</sup> will be found useful (P 435-36)

ननु यस्या कोशे भवति सा न कचिदुल्लेख्याभावाद् नाटिका नाटक-  
येन देव्याया नाटिका तथाभिलषितनाटिकम्परिवरेण इत्येतेन पुरस्कृत्य परिजन-  
समृद्धिर्भवति । एतदुभयप्रधानं सर्वं तत्रैवैवम् । तत्रैका नाटिका नाटिकाया  
भवति । यद्यप्येवं नाटिकेति मप्रशनुकारिणे भट्टोल्लेखेन । श्रीशङ्कर-  
स्वतुल्यमेतद्व्यभिचारिण्येति व्यावर्धे । तथा हि देवी कन्या च न्यायान्या-

तामेदेन चतुर्धा, कन्या तन्न पुरस्त्रीतकमेदेन द्विवेति । घण्टकाद्यस्तु  
आहु - नायको उपतेरित्यनाम्नाय नाटकादावुपनीवित न तु प्रत्यातयमपि तद्भेद-  
द्वयादन्वेऽऽशङ्कितं योऽहमेव इति । नायको उपतिरिति ये प्रमा पठन्ति  
तेर्धेनेत्य याहृत्यैकतायथा तूभयस्य कार्यम् । अन्ये प्रथमनार्थार्थं पृथगेव च  
वाक्य योजयन्ति प्रकरणमेदाप्रकरणलक्षणान् उतथाय वस्तु नाटकलक्षणाशाच  
नृपतिर्नायक स्थिते यत्नेत्यभिप्राये नाटिकेवभूतेति ।

DR (3, 46 52) Plot should be taken from प्रकरण  
and hero a king, from नाटक 3, 48 suggests that  
it may have even 1, 2, 3 or 4 acts देवी should  
be the elder queen, born of a king, serene and  
मानिनी, while the heroine should be मुग्धा, दिव्या and  
very beautiful Heroine may remain in the vic-  
inity of the king, by her connection with the har-  
em, while the hero may remain apprehensive thr-  
ough the fear of the queen

It should have the four elements of कैशिकी in  
respect of the four acts

ND (P 120-122) Out of the two heroines,  
queen and the कन्या, each one or both may be ren-  
owned or otherwise, thus yielding four types of  
नाटिका It is noted here that the plot in a नाटिका  
is sparse

BP (P 243) Hero should be renowned and  
धीरललित रस erotic, इति कैशिकी मधि except अमर्श It  
should have no विट, but विदूर may figure there

Examples BP प्रियदर्शिका SD विद्वत्शालभञ्जिका RS  
मालविनाग्निमित्र

## 2 प्रकर्णनी or प्रकरणीका

ND (P 122) recognises this type calling it a  
variation of नाटिका wherein the hero should be taken

from प्रकरण and the heroine should belong to the hero's class. It is noted that नाटिका and प्रकरणिका both concern themselves with erotic enjoyments, but while the former treats of the royal love, the latter depicts the love of merchants etc.

SD follows ND

MMC notes this but has nothing special

### 3 नाटक or चोदक

BP (P 238, 4-14) This is a variety of नाटक. According to हर्ष, नाटक with a contact between divine and human elements and with acts void of विद्वत्, becomes ताटक. But others do not accept this view. According to these others, it may have 9, 8, 7, or 5 acts and a mixture of divine and human

SD (VI 273) adds that it must have विद्वत् in each act

Examples BP मेनकाननुप-9 acts, मदरेखा 8-acts, स्तम्भ-परम्पकम्-7 acts (both these are void of विद्वत्), विक्रमोर्वशीयम्-5 acts

### 4 मट्टक

BP (P 269) It is a variety of नाटक based on नृत्य. वृत्ति कैतिली and मारुती रस no terrible रस. No लवि. It should be full of शौरसेनी, महाराष्ट्री. According to some the king should not speak in Prakrit, others prescribe मागधी or शौरसेनी for him.

It should have, in place of अङ्क, four parts with curtain being dropped on account of the impossibility of छादन स्वप्न, आग्नि etc.

ND (P 213) notes that it should have only one language, not a mixture of Sanskrit and Prakrit. It should not have विश्वम्भक or प्रवेशक.

SD (VI, 276) It should have Prakrit only and mostly अद्भुत रस. अङ्क should be called जगन्निवास.

N B BP calls it नृत्यमेदन्तक and thus treats it as a नृत्यप्रकार.

### Remarks

That नाटिका and प्रकरणिका should be taken as the derivative types is self-evident from their very names. Both are derivative names. Moreover, though नाटिका, known to NS as नाटी, seems to have been recognised rather early, its dependence on नाटक, is clear from its plot. प्रकरणिका seems to have enjoyed quite a temporary existence, there being found almost no example of the type. And the very fact that it has been recognised by such a late work as ND and by no other earlier work, goes to prove that it was a futile attempt on the part of the later theorists to create a new type, perhaps on the analogy of नाटिका.

तेदक, as it is recognised by द्वै, is rather early and yet its derivative character is clear. As a matter of fact there is very little distinguishing element about it.

सङ्ग, on the other hand, may not have been a derivative type, in spite of BP's mention that it is a variety of नाटक. BP itself, later on calls it a नृत्यप्रकार. It must have been a popular spectacle, as its loose technique shows. That there were no regular acts

but a drop-curtain was required, shows an irregular and therefore unsettled nature of this type. As a matter of fact, drop-curtain, in earlier Sanskrit Literature, is not suggested anywhere. Moreover, the very name of the type is Prakrit and the preponderance of Prakrit languages indicates a popular and perhaps a more primitive type than नाटिका. The differences of opinion with regard to the language to be used in this type are themselves enough to prove its unsettled character.

### IRREGULAR TYPES

Keith in his *Sanskrit Drama* enumerates some types of Drama, which he calls irregular. Type represented by the महानाटक is distinct and is fully discussed by Keith and De. Allegorical dramas like प्रबोधनोदय and others form another group and though they have existed from early times, theory has not recognised them separately. For all these the student is referred, to Keith's book. There are, however, one or two points which I shall like to touch upon here.

Was there a dramatic type called इमस्क ? Compare the following verse seen in the description of the preface of a drama named नवप्रह्वरितम् by घनश्याम in the Descriptive Cat of San Mss Tanjore, vol VIII, P 3693

प्रहसनइमस्कनाटकमहकाव्यद्विमञ्जरोभाणान् ।

देवीनाटकलिपि कृतवान्यथान्यमिष्टदातृचम्पू ॥

This verse places इमस्क, with प्रहसन and others

There is however a Ms of a drama called डमस्क by घनश्याम described in the Descriptive Cat of the San Mss, in the Govt Oriental Library, Madras, Vol XXI—kavyas, No 12517, which seems to be a type distinct from all other types hitherto known. It is described therein as a peculiar dramatic work. Instead of acts it has ten अङ्काः into which it is divided. They are named as राजानुराग, कलिदूषण, मुक्तिनजीवन, बुद्धिसत्तापन, अत्रोपास, शास्त्रिकभजन, पण्डितसर्वस्व, जातिसर्तर्जन, प्रभुवर्णन, अलङ्कारनन्द. But as far as this particular work is concerned it is needless to suppose that it was actually recognised as a particular type in theory. It seems to have been an attempt on the part of घनश्याम to create a new type without any backing of theory. That घनश्याम possessed this love of experimentation is seen from another of his work नमोद्वचरित which too has been described as a dramatic type.

There is also one other drama which seems to have been irregular. A drama named ययातिदेवयानीचरित by an unknown author is described in the same Cat of Madras, Vol XXI. It is not divided into acts etc. There is no regular प्रस्तावना, and yet in what appears like a प्रस्तावना, चेत्यार, instead of a सूत्रधार enters. There is ३ भरतवाक्य also.

But these seem to be stray efforts by individual writers at innovations. They are, however, not recognised in theory, as all these poets are very late in date.

CHAPTER VI  
N R T Y A-TYPES (*Upaṁśpakas*)

## CHAPTER VI

### NRTYA-TYPES (UPARUPAKAS)

Species of Nrtya-Type—general

NS does not mention any उपरूपक but treats of नाट्य which is the same as नाटिका of the later theorists, and we have seen that it is a derivative type. But Keith says (*Sanskrit Drama*, P. 349) "Needless to say, though omitted in the नाट्यशास्त्र quotations are found ascribing to Bharata the doctrine, though he mentions in them but fifteen with several variations of name". He, in this connection refers to Hall, DR P 6. It is true that some terms, which in later works, did designate certain उपरूपकs are seen in NS, but this mention of them is very incidental and often vague, affording us no clue as to their real nature.

AP (अध्याय 328) enumerates the following seventeen varieties, without calling them उपरूपकs and without defining or discussing them.

तोडक, नाटिका, मटक, शिखक, कर्ण, दुर्भङ्गिका, प्रस्थान, मणिका, माणी, नाट्यी, हरीशक, काव्य, श्रीगदितम्, नाट्यराजक, रामक, उल्लापक and प्रेक्षण.

DR (avaloka) mentions the following seven incidentally the following verse which is quoted in this connection may have been an old verse

दोम्बी श्रीगदित माण

माणप्रस्थानरामका ।

काव्य च सप्त नृत्यस्य

मेदा • स्तुम्भऽपि भावन् ॥



Abh, incidentally, mentions the following nine (P 183)

डोम्बिका, भाण, प्रस्थानम्, विद्गक भाणिका, प्ररेणम्, रामाक्रीडम्, हरीशम्, and रामकम्

Abh does not call them by the name उपरूपक and it seems that he did not take them as such. The point is discussed further on by us

DR, PR, RS and MMC do not note उपरूपक as such

KS adds धीगदित and गोष्ठी to the list of Abh

SP mentions fourteen and defines them but all these are treated by BP

BP (P 255) has these twenty

तोटक, नाटिका, गोष्ठी, सलाप, शिल्पक, डोम्बी, धीगदितम्, भाणी, प्रस्थान, काव्य, प्रेक्षणक, सट्टकम्, नाट्यरासकम्, रासक (रासक), उल्लोप्यक, हरीश, दुर्मलिका, मल्लिका, कल्पवल्ली, पारिजातक

But on P 256 ff, are defined these types individually where सट्टक is omitted (it is later treated as an additional variety) and भाण is added, and भाणी of the above list, is included under भाणिका. Further on at P 265-66 under the heading रासकम् it has twelve verses which describe the following types, almost in identical wordings as Abh

प्रस्थान, verses 1-2 and 7, काव्य 3-4, डोम्बिका 5, भाण 6 शिल्पक 8, भाणिका 9, रामाक्रीड 10, and रासक 11-12

ND (P. 213) has fourteen

सट्टक, धीगदितम्, दुर्मलिका, प्रस्थान, गोष्ठी, हरीशक, नर्तनक, प्रेक्षणक, रासक, नाट्यरासक, काव्य, भाण or भाणक, भाणिका

SD has eighteen

नाटिका, त्रोटक, गोष्ठी, मट्टक, नाट्यरासक प्रस्थानक, उद्गाप्य, काव्य, प्रेरणकम्, रासकम्, सञ्चयकम्, श्रीगदितम्, शिल्पकम्, विलासिका or विनायिका (according to others it is included under दुर्मल्लिका, so विश्वनाथ notes), दुर्मल्लिका, प्रकरणिका, हज्रीश and भाणिका

### Remarks

1. The above will show that the lengthiest list is given in BP But on an analysis of all the views, we get some more types recognised at one time or the other वर्ण (AP), दुर्मल्लिका (ND), which, however, may be the same as दुर्मल्लिका of BP, नर्तनक (ND), विलासिका (SD), शिल्पक, रामाक्रीड and प्रेरण (Abh) are the additional varieties This will bring the number to  $20+5=25$  Moreover, प्रकरणिका which has been taken as an उपरूपक by SD, is taken by others as an offshoot of प्रकरण So also, नाटिका and त्रोटक may be taken as the derivative types, as suggested by us

2 The peculiar situation, given rise to by the non-mention in Bharata of the उपरूपक, has been thus explained away by Mr K S Ramaswami Sastri in his Introduction to BP(p 51)

“From what has been said before and from certain statements contained in the present नाट्यशास्त्र it seems to be probable that केशव and his followers who made the नाट्यवेद easily accessible to the dramatists by their works, had invented the उपरूपक whose number differs with each author's definition of तटक, one of the उपरूपक, quoted by

शारदातनय is another proof of the existence of the उपरूपक before the time of हर्ष. The commentary of अभिनवगुप्त also on the last portion of the 4th Chapter of the नाट्यशास्त्र where some references from कोहल to the उपरूपक are made, supports<sup>1</sup> the contention that कोहल may be the inventor of these उपरूपक हेमचन्द्र and रामचन्द्र support the same view in their works"

It will be my purpose to show later on that the उपरूपक, as known to SD, represent a gradual growth which can be traced even to-day and that therefore no one person can be called the inventor of these types. It should be remembered that नाट्य was considered distinct from नृत्य and that our रूपक were based on नाट्य, while the उपरूपक were based on नृत्य. As NS had no occasion to discuss and define the types based on नृत्य naturally we do not find any such statement therein. So, too, DR and Abh had no occasion to speak of them. It is true that हेमचन्द्र in the 12th century counts but 11 उपरूपक, while BP has as many as twenty. But it would be wrong to argue from this that these nine additional varieties came into existence in the period between KS and BP. There are indications in BP itself that शारदातनय followed earlier

- 1 I do not know on what grounds Mr. Sastri makes this statement. It is true that Abh mentions some उपरूपक and we have duly noted them. But nowhere does Abh note that he was quoting the verses in question from कोहल. It is however possible that Abh quoted these verses from some older source but there is no indication whatsoever to know that source definitely.

works and traditions and it should be remembered that AP knew seventeen varieties of so called उपरूपक. It seems highly plausible that rhythmic dance while it was incorporating the histrionic art in it, was, at the same time, gradually developing these उपरूपक and it may be that केशव had for the first time arranged and defined them. And, all the evidence cited by Mr Sastri goes to connect केशव's name with the rise of the उपरूपक but not with their invention. KS (P 325) after treating the रूपक twelve in number, has a general note to the effect that 'and others' in the शक्ति refers to छन्द and others, which have been defined by केशव and others. As against this KS himself has a note at the end of that section that the details about the गेयरूपक or उपरूपक should be learnt from ब्रह्मवैवर्त etc ब्रह्मवैवर्तकेशवद्विषाक्षेभ्योऽङ्गमन्त्रय — which clearly shows that KS connected मत्त's name with these types.

3 Here I should point out that these varieties known to the different writers, though bearing the same names, had not been simultaneously and uniformly developed. Thus the varieties known to Abb, for instance, were very primitive when compared to the same varieties as described by BP and SD and it will be wrong to designate all of these as उपरूपक. But as I hope to clear this point later on, I shall not enter into details just now.

4 The word उपरूपक should naturally have

come into vogue, after the acceptance of the word रूपक by the dramaturgists. We have seen that though रूप is seen in NS, रूपक seems to have come into general prevalence only after DR. The word उपरूपक is still later. The types usually considered as उपरूपक were earlier known as नृत्यभेद only. DR, does not know the word उपरूपक. So also KS, ND, and BP, do not know it. Both KS and ND use the word रूपक for these additional varieties, KS calling them गेयरूपक and ND describing them by अन्यानि रूपकाणि. It is in SD that we meet with a definite usage of the word उपरूपक. ND closes with this remark

एतानि च स्वरूपमात्ररञ्जनानिमित्तत्वाद्गृहेरनभिहितत्वाच्च वृत्तादेव कीर्तितानि ।

This means that they were still in the process of being recognised as dramatic types, for as the types of नृत्य they were recognised earlier.

Out of the seven forms defined by Abh, some are found in the list of these नृत्यप्रकार as given by BP and others. But Abh did not consider them as उपरूपक. They are more like mere dances. Abh has a note,

एते प्रबन्धा नृत्तात्मका न नाट्यात्मका नाटकादिविरक्षणा ।

which shows that they had no element of drama and that they were based on नृत्त (of the 2nd variety as shown before), which according to later tradition would refer to नृत्य.

## Species of Nrtya-types—individual

## 1 भाग

Abh (P. 183) In this नर्तकी gives the description of वृत्ति, मुद्रा etc, with terrible movements of limbs. He classifies नाटक as उद्धत and मन्त्रि as उद्धतमन्त्रि.

BP (P. 268ff) There are two distinct principles of divisions recognised here, according to which नाग has nine different varieties. It is शुद्ध when a शुद्ध (i. e. Sanskrit) language is used, मन्त्रि when two languages (Sanskrit and Prakrit) are used and चित्र when many languages are used. There are other three varieties. It is उद्धत when the plot is terrible, हर्षित when the plot is charming and हर्षितोद्धत when the plot shows elements of both.

Plot. There may be descriptions and praises of इन्द्र, इन्द्र, भवानी, स्कन्द and प्रत्यक्षिण. It must have terrible action. It must have no females, while it must be descriptive. Also it may have praises of kings in गणाय, unfolding their virtues etc. It must be full of music, dialogue (संक्षेप) and decorated by noble (scenes).

Whatever action is difficult and involves skill should be woven in a नाग.

Music. A शुद्ध नाग is punctuated by seven विधान, each विधान showing a varying programme of music as under

Frist	विश्राम	has	वर्ण, मत्तपाली, भग्नताल मात्रा
Second	,,	,,	भग्नतालगाथा, द्विपथक, वसन्त
Third	,,	,,	विषमच्छिन्नमात्रा, भग्नताल, मागधी, रथ्या
Fourth	,,	,,	द्विपथक, रथ्या, and वसन्त
Fifth	,,	,,	रथ्या, भग्नताल, मार्गनिका, द्विपथ, विषम

Here is a note that the भाण called नन्दिमाली should be included under this type, as those who consider it as a distinct type, know not भरत's view And, then, नन्दिमाली is described as follows

(1) The plot is recited or acted with reference to an आकाशगुरुप, using the word भाव (भावप्रयोगवान्) to be applied to noble persons (2) It consists mostly of terrible action (3) Sometimes it has descriptions excluding females (4) It should be full of गद्य and other ways of रत्नस्तुति, (5) and accompanied with good music and (6) noble speech (7) It may have praises of ब्रह्मा, रुद्र, स्कन्द, and other gods

There is a general note that whatever has been said with regard to acts, रथिस etc , with reference to भाण of the रूपक type holds good in this case too

In the Introduction to BP it is noted that the first set of verses (i e those that do not apply to the नन्दिमाली type) are also seen in SP SP also recognises नन्दिमाली and includes it under this type But the present NS contains no reference to नन्दिमाली

ND (P 215), too, has the same six types of भाण, on the same two principles and his भाण or भाण्य contains nothing new

## Remarks

It will be noted that the नन्दिनाली type as described in BP, differs from the ordinary type of उपरूपक भाग only in one respect, the former has आकाशमणि and acts etc., while the latter shows the absence of both these elements

## 2. भाषिका

BP (P 262) Plot भाग, having mostly हरिचरित for its subject-matter, with accepted metres in गायक, वीर, मन्त्रा etc., becomes by graceful gestures, भाषिका There may be nine or ten different threads, but the plot must be sparse, full of विट, पीछमंद and विद्वत्, and excitement should be created in the audience by various turns of speech.

रस mainly erotic Heroine रुद्रानेयध्वनादिका सधि. void of गर्भ and विनय रति पावनी

Music and dance ten लस्यारस are in place as in भाग It should have दिव्यचारि, should have graceful acting, वृत्त punctuated by ताल, at times रथा etc., and should be void of अर्धेन्द्रादनिवरणपवनवन्दननवाजी, विधान and उत्तान It should be performed by females Of course, रस and ताल may be adopted at proper places

Example बीजावली

ND (P 215) recognises this type but has nothing distinct

SD (VI, 305 ff) नर मुच and निर्वह इति, कैशिकी and भास्वी Act 1 Heroine noble Hero मन् SD requires the following seven अङ्ग here उपन्यास, विन्यास,



विबोध, साध्वस, समर्पण, निवृत्ति and सहर, which are defined as under when कार्य is incidentally described it is उपन्यास, when gloomy speech is uttered it is विन्यास, when doubt is removed it is विबोध, when there is boasting it is साध्वस, again समर्पण constitutes in taunting through anger, beginning of निदर्शन is निवृत्ति and actual achievement of fruit is सहर

Example कामदत्ता

Abh, (I P 183) calling भाणिका as उद्धतमयुग describes it thus In भाणिका, there is amusement due to play with children, नियुद्ध, lions or pigs or playing with banner etc

### Remarks

As far as BP's description is concerned if any one wants to see two distinct types described under the caption of भाणिका, as the editor justly does he shall have to distinguish between भाणिका and भाणी, former being based on वृत्त etc, and the latter being a form of उपरूपक having सधि, अह्न etc This भाणी seems to be the same as डोम्नी of BP and भाणिका of SD Compare their details

### 3 डोम्नी or डोम्बिका

Abh (I P 183) notes a type called डोम्बिका

छन्नानुरागगर्भाभिहक्तिभिर्यत्र भूत ।

आवर्ज्यते मन सा तु मयुषा डोम्बिका मता ॥

BP (P 257) Act 1 वृत्ति वैशिष्टी and भारती २१ Heroic and Erotic Heroine अज्ञानेयस्या मन्त्रेणायु and पहरसायिसा

Example: कनकदास.

Editor of BP says. "This दोम्बी is known according to some as मणिक्छ and the same fact has been stated here in the line दोम्ब्येव मणिक्छोदानतमिच्छ विद्वन्नाथ followed that view and described this kind of drama as मणिक्छ with the same description as found here and with the same कनकदास as an example. The definition of मणिक्छ as given by शास्त्राचार्य and मोक्ष is quite different from that of विद्वन्नाथ "

### Remarks on 1, 2 and 3

Bearing in mind the descriptions of भाग, मणिक्छ, मणि and दोम्बी as given in BP, one can see that मणिक्छ differs from भाग in the following points

(1) It is mild, (2) It has mostly हरिचरित, with nine or ten threads, (3) It has no विधान, उद्गार and अर्धेन्द्रादृष्ट etc (4) It should be performed by females

भाग and दोम्बी are almost identical Also it would appear that SD has no counterpart for BP's भाग, while it describes मणिक्छ, which, however, has similarity with BP's मणिक्छ, but is wholly identical with BP's दोम्बी Abb's दोम्बिक्छ and मणिक्छ are, again distinct

मणिक्छ as defined by BP, though having a preponderance of dance-elements, contains enough elements to transfer itself into मणिक्छ of SD. Thus there seems to be running a common thread through मणिक्छ of SD and दोम्बी of BP (which, too, is called मणिक्छ or मणिक्छ) yielding sufficient data for

inferring a serial evolution, डोम्बी or डोम्बिका of Abh representing the earliest stage and डोम्बी of BP or भाणिका of SD the last stage of the same form of entertainment while भाणिका of BP is a variety, probably more primitive and representing the transitional stage from डोम्बिका of Abh, (Abh's भाणिका is an earlier form of BP's भाणिका) to भाणिका of SD. And this भाणिका itself has a counter-part in भाण-उपरूपक, which seems to have enjoyed a temporary existence as an independent variety, as it emphasises the उद्भूत acting. But in भाणिका and भाणी of BP, again, there are sufficient elements (e.g. 9 or 10 threads, heroes विट, पीटमर्द etc.) to develop themselves into भाण रूपक. भाण रूपक seems, therefore, to be the definite ultimate dramatic form to which डोम्बिका, भाणिका, भाणी, डोम्बी, भाण उपरूपक (all of which are either नृत्त or नृत्य types, with the possible exception of भाणिका of SD and डोम्बी of BP), passed on imperceptibly. आकाशमणित, which is a very important element of the भाण रूपक, though not seen in any of these forms, is recognised by BP in the case of the नन्दिमाली type of भाण.

#### 4 रामक.

BP (P. 265 ff) This section of BP is hopeless for its textual accuracy. Under the head of रामक, this section defines, in identical verses which have been quoted by Abh at P. 183, eight forms of dances, the last of them being रामक. It is thus defined here:

माडलेन तु यद्भूत तदा (१। १ ह्रीं) गरुडिनि स्मृतम् ।  
एवैवमस्य नेना ह्याद्रोपनीणा यम हृदि ॥

अनेकवर्तकीयोगं विन्तुल्लसन्वितम् ।

आवतुषष्टिपुलकासक मन्दगोष्ठम् ॥

Out of these two verses, the first is always quoted as the definition of *हृदयक* by others (see ND, Abh and elsewhere) and even BP shows the v.l. *हृदयक*, which may be the correct reading. The second of the above verses is the same as is given by Abh as the definition of *गणक*, and this seems to be the original definition of *गणक*.

But BP has another definition of *गणक* (on P 269, 11 13-19), where it is described thus

(1) Act 1 (2) void of मूयार (3) It must have well-arranged (सुष्ठु) नाट्यी (4) It should have five पात्र, (5) three वयस, (6) various languages, (7) कर्तृक and भाग्यी वृत्ति (8) वीर्यवृत्ति, (9) prominent hero, (10) famous heroine, (11) उदात्त भाव and (12) उत्तरोत्तर

A third definition of *गणक* is also seen in BP at P 265, 11 10-13

लम्बा दुःस्वहोदयो मुरगं पीत्वा न यत्नः

निर्दिष्टमल्लिखितविहितो मुक्तो लव मेदः ।

दिनानां विविचिन्तितानां मेदः प्रकृतः

चारुवदन्मन्दलग्नः शोभ्य मया गणकः ॥

It should be remarked here that though this verse defines *गणक*, it is put in this edition under the section of *गणकगणक*.

One more definition of *गणक* is seen in BP under *गणकगणक*, consisting of one verse, which is the one given in ND as the definition of *गणक*

SD (VI, 288 290) substantially agrees in the second version of BP, by defining रसक as one which should have (1) five पात्रs, (2) मुख and निर्वहण, (3) various languages, (4) भारती, and कैशिकी वृत्तिs, (5) no सूत्रगार, (6) one act, (7) वीर्यज्ञs (8) art (कला), (9) शिष्टनान्दी, (10) famous heroine, (11) foolish hero (मुख्य in BP seems to be more in harmony with the nature of रसक, as defined here, than मूर्ख as read here), (12) उदात्त भावs and (13) उत्तरोत्तर

There is a note that some allow प्रतिमुद्र, too  
Example मेनकाहितम्

ND (P 214) calls that type as रसक which has 16, 12 or 8 heroines dancing with special postures as पिण्डीगन्धs etc

### 5 नाट्यरामक

This section, too, as printed in BP is so much confused that I shall quote it *in extenso* and then shall try to determine the exact nature of the type

पाडेशद्वादशाष्टौ वा यस्मिन्मृत्यन्ति नायिका ।  
पिण्डीवन्धादिविन्यासे रसक तदुदाहृतम् ॥  
पिण्डनाम्नेतिपिण्डी गुम्फनान्छुखला भवेत् ।  
भेदनाम्नेयको जातो लताजालोपनाहत ॥  
एते उतात्मना कार्या नाश्वरन्त क्रियाविधौ ।  
सुसुमारोद्वेगैरङ्गैर्गायिकाभिरीलक्षणा ॥  
नाट्यम्यावधयो वेत्ते पिण्डाद्या दृश्यजातय ।  
नव भेदा विधीयन्ते श्रमुकार्यनुरागिण ॥  
कानिमीभिर्भुवो भर्तुं वेष्टिते यत्र नृत्यते ।  
रागाङ्गमन्दनागोक्य ग द्वेषो नाट्यरामक ॥

चर्चरमिति ता प्राहुर्वीतालेन तत्र तु ।  
 प्रविशेन्धमिनीयुगलं सनवरादिशिक्षितम् ॥  
 वामदक्षिणसुवारैरङ्गैस्तनुरिष्टतम् ।  
 तदन्तदेव बागन्त आलीढद्वन्द्वतस्थितम् ॥  
 चोलिङ्गमिद्वत ताल वादद्यना प्रदर्शयेत् ।  
 पञ्चधातकसुत्रार्थजतस्तस्मात्प्रवर्तते ॥  
 नृतेन विमलेन्वन्दे चतुर्भिर्बिम्बैरेव वा ।  
 अन्योन्यादिकसुत्राङ्गैर्हन्ततालैर्मिथ कृते ॥  
 परिक्रम्य च निष्कन्तेततोऽन्यद्द्वित्रय विरेत् ।  
 एकद्वयान्नु नि सधि प्रवेशो निर्गमस्तयो ॥  
 पुष्पाक्षतिप्रयोग तु मात्रातालेन योजयेत् ।  
 उभयो पात्रयो पश्चात्पात्राणि प्रविशन्ति हि ॥  
 बद्धा पङ्क्ततालेन रथ्यावर्णादेवैकैः ।  
 शुष्कगीतप्रयोगेन ततो गादन्ति गावद्य ॥  
 स्तम्भमिमेयकैर्गुञ्जैर्गानावृत्तप्रदर्शकैः ।  
 पात्रैश्चैकप्रसंयुक्त्रे पिण्डीबन्धं तु धारयेत् ॥  
 ततो मञ्जमिव ताल शुष्कवर्गयोगत ।  
 सुरजाञ्जराद्यं तु हन्याद्द्विदण्डकैः ॥  
 एव नृचं क्रमेणायो ह्यनसार समापयेत् ।  
 अन्तमारभ्य चान्यदेवमेव प्रकल्पयेत् ॥  
 तथापि पूर्ववन्मृतं कथमस्तु त्यक्त्वा ।  
 कथयेद्गमकम्यान्ते शुभार्थं वचनश्रमम् ॥

It will be seen that the first of these verses is a description of रसक and the next three verses give the explanations of the technical terms पिण्डीबन्ध etc पिण्डीबन्ध is so called because of the huddling up closely, गच्छला is so called by an arrangement of limbs like knitting, मेदक by being arranged in the form of a net.

Then the fifth verse in the above quotation

seems to be the original definition of नाट्यरासक, particularly as ND (P 315) has this very verse alone as the definition of नाट्यरासक. It is that, wherein, females dance out the doings of a king

The remaining verses explain the programme of music and dance to be followed in नाट्य

When it has वर्णताल it is called चर्चरी, wherein two females, clever in समवर्ण etc., may enter embracing one another by their limbs and moving right and left. They retire after some dancing and then enters another pair of females. Their exit and entrance must be simultaneous. This new pair may perform the scattering of flowers by मात्राताल. After this, other characters may enter with प्रणवताल and रम्यादिवर्णस. Then the singers sing with शुष्कगीतप्रयोग. Then पिण्डीबन्धन formed by many पात्रस, by means of लता, मेघक, गुल्मक etc. should be performed. Then there may occur मङ्गल with शुष्कवर्णप्रयोग and मुरजाक्षराद्य may be beaten with दण्डद्विदण्डक

Thus with such dancing, the first अङ्क would be over. Three such अङ्काः with dancing, as before should be performed, with proper rhythm

From the last line in the above quotation it seems that this musical scheme may be applied to रासक also

Appendix II to BP contains the following additional definition of नाट्यरासक at P, 403

पूर्णनेत्रभ्यरात्रेण नान्दी यत्र विधीयते ।  
मुक्तादिगणधिमभिन्न वानिदृतिचतुष्टयम् ॥

यत्र पात्राण्युगमानि न कदाचन सूत्रधर ।  
 कन्व्योऽपवा नटनटीप्रवेशेनानुवक्तन ॥  
 दिव्य वा मानुष वय मित्र वा वस्तु यत्र च ।  
 विप्रलम्भरसप्राय यत्र प्रख्यातनायकम् ॥  
 क्षनिभिर्भुवो भर्तुश्चेष्टित यत्र दृश्यते ।  
 रागाद्वसन्तनामाद्य स द्वेगो नाट्यरासक ॥

An analysis of this would give the following characteristics of नाट्यरासक.

(1) full नान्दी to be recited by the characters behind the curtain, (2) सचिः like मुख and others, (3) at times all the four कृत्त (4) no single character should enter, (5) सूत्रधार should be brought in or अनुवक्तन may show the presence of नट and नटी, (6) plot may be divine or both, (7) रस विप्रलम्भ, (8) famous hero, (9) females should sing and dance the doings of a king

SD (VI, 277-79) has this

(1) one act, (2) बहुताललयस्थिति, (3) Noble hero, (4) पीडनर्त as उपनायक, (5) prominent हस्त्य with शङ्खार (6) heroine-वामनमुज्जिच्छ, (7) मुख निर्वहण-सचिः, (8) all र स्यादः, (9) some allow all the four सचिः except प्रतिमुख

Example. सचिःद्वयवती-वीगावती, सचिःनुष्टयवती -विलासवती

### Remarks on 4 and 5

Both these are treated at length and yet as far as BP is concerned the text as printed in G. O S, is hopelessly confused. In this connection the readings noted in the Appendix II at P. 408, seem to throw quite a flood of light and would be help-



ful in reconstructing coherent text for both these types

Thus P 263, l 23 to P 266, l 14 describe both these types out of which, following reconstruction can be made

### रासक

(1) P 263, l 23 to P 264, l 7 and 264, l. 10 to P 265, l 9 describe one type of रासक

(2) P 265, l 10 to P 265, l 13 embody another view agreeing in essentials with (1)

(3) P 266, l 13-14 give perhaps the earliest known definition of रासक (as the same verse is quoted by Abh at P 183), which also does not differ much in essentials from (1) and (2) above, as all these treat it as a dance-form (4) P 269, ll 12-19 give a description of रासक which differs widely from all the above three views and considers it as a type of drama

### नाट्यरासक

(1) P 164, ll 8-9 preserve perhaps the earliest definition of नाट्यरासक as the same verse is found in ND This description treats it as a dance-form

(2) Description of नाट्यरासक as found on P 408 considers it as a form of drama and thus agrees in essentials with SD's definition of it

(3) P 265, l 15 to 266, l 12 (though printed under the section of रसक) contain older de-

scriptions of प्रस्थान, दान्य, दोन्दिच, माग, शिष्यक, मणिच, रानार्कड and हर्षि (p 266, l, ll wrongly reads रावक for हर्षि) as these very verses are found quoted by Abh at P. 183.

Therefore the definition of नाट्यरावक as given on P 408 should be taken as the correct one and be incorporated in the text as an alternative definition of नाट्यरावक, and the definition of रावक on P. 408 should only be consulted in fixing the readings of the text as printed on P. 266, for it has no more worth

These different definitions of both these forms prove beyond doubt that they have evolved from mere dance to an organised नृत्य form and thence to an elementary forms of drama.

#### 6. प्रस्थानक

Abh (P. 183) has one verse, the same as the first type of BP as will be described below and this definition therefore, would be the earliest known definition of प्रस्थानक

BP (P 262, ll 19-22)

First type (p 266, ll 3-4)

Starting on a journey with a gait like that of an elephant constitutes प्रस्थान It should be बन्धविद्ध and सुन्दर

Second type (P 265, ll 15-19, under the heading रावक) (1) one act, (2) सुन्दर and निर्दरा संकेत, (3) it should have in the beginning चक्रर roused by journey or by first love and should end in वीर (4) It should

be full of the descriptions of monsoon and spring

(5) It should have four अपमारः

Third type (P 262, ll 19-22)

(1) Two acts, (2) कैशिकीवृत्ति, (3) द्विभोग्नायक, (4) दास, विट, चेड, etc, as नायक (5) It should be charming on account of drinking and other sports, (6) and full of लय and ताल (7) मुख and निर्वहण सभिः

Example गङ्गाविलोक

ND (P 214) has only one type, the second of BP, and describes it in identical terms only pointing out that अपमारः are नृत्यच्छत्रानि सण्डानि and that it is called प्रस्थान with reference to journey, which seems to have been the original idea as suggested in the first type of BP

SD (VI, 280-281) has these additional points:

(1) heroine-दासी (2) कैशिकी and भारती as वृत्तिः

SP has only the second type of BP

## 7. नर्तनक

Though this variety has not been included in the general list of the उपहृतः, it seems to have been recognised, at one time or the other, as a distinct type, for the verse that is seen in ND (P 214) and which again is found as the first verse in the description of प्रस्थानक of BP, is clearly a description of नर्तनक. The verse is this:

पदार्थाभिनयं यत्र ललितं च लयाभिनयम् ।

कुह्यते नर्तकी यत्र सोऽपि नर्तनकः पुनः ॥

ND also has the following explanation

यस्य पदार्थाभिनयं छलितलपं सारति नर्तकी कुरुते ।  
तन्मर्तक-सम्य-सार-छलित-द्विषादि ॥

Then it is pointed out that सम्य is the सार्य which is विवर्णित्य, छलित is full of गङ्गा, मीर and रीर, and द्विषी is a छन्दोभेद सार्य is full of गङ्गा

It seems that according to BP (P 363, 1 9) this नर्तक should have छलित (which is the same as छलित of ND) सार्य with सम्य, गुणल and चतुष्टय. (Is this not the same as छलित नट्य of मायिकप्रतिमित्र, which too, has चतुष्टय etc ?) Also it should be void of गर्भ and निर्वर्त, having all वृत्ति, full of मङ्गली and शौभेनी and स and भव्य. When it has two रत्न it should have उत्तम and अश्व heroes, and भारती and आरभती as रत्न, and rarely सारती

Example वलिप and वृद्धिद्विष्य.

In fact the first five verses under प्रेक्षणक in BP, define नर्तक which is used in Masculine, and all the attributes in these verses are in Masculine, while the last three lines describe प्रेक्षणक which is taken as Neuter and all the attributes in these three lines are in Neuter

## 7. प्रेक्षणक

AP notes it

BP (P. 363) Definition given here suggests that नर्तक when it exhibits 'at times गर्भ and अश्वर्त रत्न, at times many वेपथ्य speeches, at times four वृत्ति and no गङ्गा' is प्रेक्षणक.

Example त्रिभुवन्दम्

ND (P 214) has this Whatever is performed in street, assembly, squares or temples by many पात्रs, is called प्रेक्षणक as for illustration कामदहन etc

SD (VI 286-87) calls it प्रेक्षणम्

(1) void of गर्भ and विमर्श, (2) हीननायक, (3) no सूत्रधार, (4) one act, (5) no विष्कम्भक, and प्रवेशक, (6) presence of निबुद्ध and सम्प्रेष्ट necessary, (7) all वृत्तिस (8) नाग्दी and प्ररोचना are sung, in the नेपथ्य

Example same as is given in BP under नर्तनक

SP divides it into नर्तनक and प्रेक्षणक and gives the definition of both as found in ND.

N B BP at P 266 has this

भादयप्राय प्रेक्षणक स्यात्प्रहेलिकान्वितम्

which is found in Abh as the definition of प्रेरण, with the v l हास्ये प्राय प्रेरण तु

### Remarks on 8 and 9

From the treatment given to these types in ND and SP there seem to have been two varieties of the same type of dramatic entertainment, which were still in a process of being distinguished from one another, but which, however, never happened BP shows a period when both these types were hopelessly mixed up and नर्तनक was losing its individuality SD shows नर्तनक to have been completely superseded and eclipsed by प्रेक्षणक, incorporating elements of both the forms in one

In a MS entitled नाट्यसंग्रहटीका, in the Govt Oriental Library, at B O R I, Poona, a variety of नाट्य called प्रेक्षण is defined As विद्यनाथ calls प्रेक्षणक

by the name प्रेङ्ग, this प्रेङ्ग, too, may refer to it  
The definition is this (fol 30, ll. 8-9)

गीत प्रवृत्त-१, १ नरनारीप्रवर्तितम् ।

प्रेङ्गा स्वनोद्गारी नाट्य प्रेङ्गमुच्यते ॥

As the general element in प्रेङ्गक is the playing by men and women in squares etc, this too may refer to the same type

### 10 दहीशम

AP notes it

BP (P 266) Heroine 7, 8, 9 or 10 Act 1 or 2 इति कैशिकी सधि विनयं and मुख. Heroes 5 or 6, रुक्मिणी, दक्षिण and म्यात, who may be विप्र, सत्र, अमात्य or दण्डि

Miscellaneous It should have मुख and अवसर when it has two acts and गर्भगर्भ when it has one act. It should have musical लस्य with शक्ति, मृग तात, दय and दिशान

Example कलिदेवकन

ND (P 214)

यम्भट्टेन नृन श्रीगा हर्षादाक तु नराद् ।

तत्रेको नेना म्यागोपश्रीणानिव मुरारि ॥

The same verse is found in BP with राख for इश्याक as the reading

SD (VI, 306-7) Act one, Hero one, clever in speech इति कैशिकी सधि मुख and निरंजन Heroine 7, 8, or 10 and बहुतात्स्न्यस्यति

### 11. उद्गोप्यकम्

BP (P 266) Act one. सधि void of अवसर

रस हास्य, दृष्टार and कथन Hero and Heroine चतुर्गुणवत्

Miscellaneous It should have the अङ्ग given under शिल्पक, a song with three divisions called उद्गोप्यक which has been explained as गन्धर्वनिर्णय

Example देवीमाधव उदात्तकुलरम्

SD (VI, 282-3) According to some, there should be four heroines and three acts and बहुस प्राम

SP does not include this under the group of उपरूपः

## 12 काव्य

AP has noted it

BP (P 262) रस हास्य and दृष्टार वृत्ति all परि void of गर्भ and अमर्श Act one Hero ललितादात्त, who may be a मित्र, अमात्य or a वणिर् Heroine कुलजा and वेश्या

Miscellaneous It should have भग्नताल, द्विपदी, मन्द, मात्रा and at times लस्य It should be mixed with विट, चेट and interspersed with talks of joyous ladies and विट etc

Example गौडविजयम् सुग्रीवकलनम्

ND (P 215) has the following as the definition of काव्य, which in BP has been included under रमर and which again, is recognised by भाज "It should have अङ्गितर, मात्रा, धृवा, भग्नताल, पञ्चिहा and पञ्चिहा"

ND (VI, 281-5) has this additional कति except अमर्श, Example याज्ञोदय

SP divides काव्य into सुट and विट It seems that even BP distinguished two types according as (1) the Hero is ललित and उदात्त and heroine रम्या

and वेददा and (2) as the hero is a विप्र etc

### 13 पारिजातकम् or पारिजातलता

BP (P 268) Act one सखि मुन and निवेदा  
रघु, दया' and वी' Hero देव, धन-उदा' Heroine.  
कउन्जरीना or मोमिनी, स्वीत गतिद्व They may be 8 and  
4 and should be expert in दन्तराजक

Miscellaneous वर्णनदा, खड्गताल, गद्या three अक्षरस  
and चित्रक्या It should be charming at times by  
the jokes of विद्वक्

Example गङ्गातरङ्गि

### 14. सहायक

BP (P. 256) Plot renowned or imaginary or  
both रस Erotic and Humourous should not be  
present here, but a mixture of वीर and रौद्र is allowed  
other रस may be subordinate. Hero angry,  
hypocrite, सरलचान्द्र, trying to meet with the incide-  
nts of कण्डयुद्ध, caused by fate or enemy. वृत्ति सत्वती,  
आरम्भ—उद्दिष्टा Acts three, but it should be full of  
राग in the second act. First must have विद्व and  
third must have कण्ड सखि four, except प्रतिमुख

SD (VI, 281-2) Acts 4 or 3

Example मायध्वलिङ्ग

### 15 शिल्पकम्

BP (P. 257). Acts four वृत्ति four रस except  
हान्य Hero नन्दन, sometimes a हीनोपनायक too, who  
may have been connected with ज्ञान etc. Heroine.  
कडा, पुनर् or कन्या born of a ब्रह्मा or सखि . g मध्व  
म लती, कन्या ९ कन्या



Miscellaneous There should be the following  
 17 अंगस उल्लास, अवहित्य, प्रयत्न, अरासन, तर्क, सशय, तप, उद्वेग,  
 मोह्य, आलस्य कम्प, अनुगति विस्मय साधन, उच्छ्वास, आतक, शून्यता,  
 प्रलोभन, नाट्य, सम्प्रेट, आश्वास, सन्तोषातिशय, प्रमाद, प्रमद, युक्ति,  
 प्रलोभन, प्रशस्ति

SD (VI, 296-300) रम except हास्य and शान्त

Example कनकावतीमाधव

BP on P 266 has this which is seen in Abh  
 as the definition of दिदाक

"When one describes to a friend, one's  
 husband's haughty conduct and sometimes soft  
 conduct of a धूर्त it is शिल्पक "

## 16 गोष्ठी

BP (P 256) Act 1 रस, शृंगार Heroes 9 or  
 10, प्राकृतनायकस Heroines 5 or 6, beautiful सधि void  
 of गर्भ and अवमर्श, वृत्ति देशिकी-soft Plot imaginary,  
 not very noble Note the following for its plot

गोपीरतेर्विहगतो गोष्ठबालस्य चेष्टितम् ।

यत्तु यमलार्जुनदातवनिधाकृत तत्तु गोष्ठी स्यात् ॥

ND (P 214) has the following

गोष्ठे यत्र विहातचष्टितमिह कैटमद्वय ।

गिष्ट्यासुप्रमथनप्रमृति तदिच्छन्ति गोष्ठीति ॥

SD Example रैवतमदनिवा

SP has the same verse as seen in BP

## 17 कल्पयल्ली

BP (P 268) It should have हास्य and शृंगार as  
 the रस, its hero should be उदात्त, उपनायक should be

a पीठमर्द and heroine a वासकवज्जा or अभिसरिका It should have मुख, प्रतिमुख and निर्वहण as संधिः Its plot should have उदात्त descriptions

Miscellaneous द्विपदी, खण्ड, रम्या, वासकताल, लयत्रय and the ten elements of नाट्य

Example मागिक्यवष्टिका

### 18 श्रीगदितम

AP has noted it

BP (P 258) Hero renowned वृत्ति मारती संधि  
void of गर्भ and अविमर्श Act one रस विरलम्भप्राय  
Heroine कुलजा

Miscellaneous It should be full of the word 'श्री' and according to some श्री may sing there sitting

Example श्रीहामातलम्

SP has the same as BP

### 19 पित्रक

Abh (P 183)

सख्या सनभ भर्तुंयदुद्धत इतमुच्यत ।

ममूय च इविद्वैतवर्ति पित्रकस्तु स ॥

This approaches श्रीगदितम् of BP but BP has this same verse as the definition of प्रस्थानक

20 दुर्महिका, also called मरुष्टिका

(ND calls it दुर्महिका)

AP has noted it

BP (P. 267), Heroine प्रौढा and नागर. Acts 4 संधि void of गर्भ

Miscellaneous चरित, प्रतिद love between youthful persons—all these are described in private by a इतिहा, in प्राम्द manners, she, talking thus, asks for money and getting it, desires for more

N B The first act should be as long as three नाटिकाs, and a रिट should act at will therein, in the second विदूरक should act for five नाटिकाs, and in the third पीडमर्द for seven नाटिकाs and in the fourth all the three act for ten नाटिकाs

This is also called मन्त्रिका, wherein पुरोहित, अमात्य or लपन is described as fallen on bad days This is a धुरकथा in महाराष्ट्री

SD (VI, 303-305) इति कैशिकी, and भारती Hero: few, नागर According to SD it should have six heroines in the second act and a नागर should act in the third act

Example बिन्दुमती

SP मन्त्रिका of BP is described as a अव्यकाव्य in the same verses

KS (P 339) considers this as a prose story and defines it thus

प्रेतमहापाष्टमायया धुरकथा गोरोचनाद्वयत्यादिवन्मन्त्रिका । यस्यां पुरोहितामात्यनायकादीनां प्रारब्धनिर्वाहे उपदस मापि मन्त्रिका ।

In the इति is quoted the following

नया च धुरकथा मन्थरी प्रेतमहापाष्टमायया भवति । गोरोचनेन कार्या सान्द्रासीतार्कचट्टिमि । तथाच यस्यामुपदश स्यात्पुरोहितामात्यनायकादीनां प्रारब्धनिर्वाहे मापि हि मन्थिका भवति ।

## 21 मल्लिका or मणिकुल्या

BP (P 267) रस भोगांग् इति कैचिकी Act two, having विद्वक् and विट acting in the first and second respectively Plot It should not be clear first but should become so at the end सन्धि void of गर्भ and विमर्श

Miscellaneous It has गायक द्विपक्ष रश्मि and वानरजाल

मणिकुल्या जन्मिन् न लक्ष्यते यत् पूर्वम् वा वस्तु ।

पश्चाद्व्यस्यते वा सा मणिकुल्यायि मर्त्ये हेतुः ॥

SP has taken this type as a प्रबन्धव्य KS (P 339) has this, but considers it a prose story

रश्मि पूर्वम् वस्तु न लक्ष्यते पश्चात् प्रद्यत्यते सा मन्महासितादिवन्मणिकुल्या ।

and in the इति the above verse is quoted

## 22 विलामिका

SD (VI, 301-2) "It is also called विमर्शिका by some and included under दुर्भेद्य by others "

रस भोगांग् Act one सन्धि void of गर्भ and अवमर्श Hero हीन Plot sparse and renowned

Miscellaneous It should have ten लम्बावः and विद्वक् विट and पञ्चमर्श

## 23 रामाजीड and प्रेम्ण

Abh (P 133)

रामाजीड प्रेम्ण तु स्थाप्रद्वैतकान्तिनम् ।

अनुसन्धितम् इति त्वीड तु मायम् ॥

NDS has a type of नाट्य which it calls by the name of प्रेरण. It is thus defined there (fol 30)

दीप्तमुग्धनमस्माद्विकृताकारदर्शने ।

धर्षणयुक्तचथादिविन्वामकुहने ॥

प्रसरणे पाष्णिषाते हृद्यगोतादिवादने ।

मनोभवप्रेरणया प्रेरण नाट्यमुच्यते ॥

Evidently the two types as recognised by Abh and NDS have a common thread between them दीप्तमुग्धन etc., would create such an appearance of the actor that humour would be excited, which after all, is the essential recognised by Abh

NDS also recognises a type called रमाकीड, which has not been described there as its nature is obvious from the word itself. May it have anything to do with our रमाकीड? It is शृणालम्बित according to NDS



CHAPTER VII  
*EVOLUION OF NRTYA-TYPES*





### EVOLUTION OF NRTYA-TYPES

**A**FTER thus collecting details about all these several *nrtya*-types, we shall turn to see their development. But before doing so, it will be convenient if we tabulate the results of these details. The accompanying table shows the details of all these types, at a glance and contains all the important points gathered in the previous chapter, under these individual heads. Remarks made in the last two columns of this table will be explained further.

The table shows that the types that have been described here have not all developed uniformly. Some types show a preponderance of musical elements and others show some dramatic development, though even in this latter case, an alternative description is seen in most cases, indicating their essentially musical nature.

It will be seen, for instance that, with the exception of *natya* and *natya*, all the other forms are very elementary dramatic forms presenting at the same time, an original musical nature. *natya* seems to have been developed very early and *natya* seems to be its variant as we shall see further. *natya*, on the other hand, seems to have developed from a prose-story to a dramatic form and it shows several elements which are later seen in *natya*. All the other types reveal a double character. Why



is this so? I think it suggests a gradual development of these types. There must have been a time when these types must have existed as नृत्य types, showing dance and music only, without any speech. This is further corroborated by the following considerations.

We have seen that उपरूपक, a term used for these types by SD, is a very late term, the earlier ones being नृत्यप्रका' and गेयरूपक. We have also found that regular रूपक types differed, theoretically, from these नृत्य types in the point that रूपक had speech added to it. But the term नृत्यप्रका' and its explanations uniformly presuppose a type of entertainment which had dance and music incorporated into it, but no dialogue. This is expressly mentioned by Abh and DR. SD is silent about the point and this silence is significant as we shall presently see.

From the fact that most of the नृत्य types as detailed above, present an alternate description, thus showing an earlier नृत्य form and a later नाट्य form, it seems that terms नृत्यप्रका' and उपरूपक should not be taken in the same sense. Take for instance, the प्रत्यान type of which BP has preserved three alternate descriptions, while the descriptions of Abh, ND and SD each, show some distinct features. It will be marked that whereas the descriptions of Abh, ND and the first type of BP are purely musical showing no details about act, मयि etc., BP's second type is a नृत्य form showing details regarding act, मयि मग etc., and BP's third type shows that it is a further evolved form of

BP's second type, as this third type shows two acts as against one in the second type and details about hero etc., which are absent in the second. SD's description tallies with BP's third type but shows some variations as regards heroine and इति. Now all these types of प्रत्येक have been taken by BP as नृत्यप्रकार's while SD considers its type as an उपनयन. What is the necessity of making this change in the terminology? It seems that those types that are taken by SD as उपनयन's once existed as merely musical types i.e. as forms of entertainment in which there was अभिनय, music and dance but no dialogue. Later on these same types developed an elementary dramatic character, which added dialogue to the earlier type. These earlier types may have embodied some story, but the whole story, it seems, was composed in songs, which were sung in musical accompaniment with appropriate histrionics. There seems to be some evidence for this supposition. The earlier definitions of these नृत्यप्रकार's as given by Abh and as found in BP, show that in these types some sort of episodes were to be sung. Abh's definition of डोन्डिच requires that the dancer should attract the mind of the king by speeches pregnant with love-suggestions. निरुक्त of Abh would afford greater opportunity for embodying some sort of story-like episode, as in it the heroine describes before her friend the terrible manners of her husband or the graceful acts of a धूर्त. As a matter of fact, these are treated by अभिनय as distinct from नृत्य types. These same

types, as their names and descriptions in BP and other works suggest, developed into नृत्य types when probably a continuous story in songs, was acted before the audience. These were purely नृत्य types. But side by side with these, रूपक types were also developing and as a reflection of the रूपकs, these नृत्य types borrowed speech and transformed themselves into some sort of half-developed रूपकs, which in विश्वनाथ's age, came to be regarded as उपरूपकs. That these नृत्य types had no speech seems fairly certain by the term गेयरूपक as distinguished from the term पाठ्यरूपक as used by हेमचन्द्र. Thus it seems that terms नृत्यप्रकार or गेयरूपक and उपरूपक do not denote the same thing. The earlier type was void of speech which the later type added on and then the earlier distinction that नृत्य type could create only भाव and नाट्य type रस, was given up. Naturally the sort of उपरूपक known to SD (descriptions of all the types as given by SD are dramatic in nature, not a single type showing a musical character) and represented to-day by उन्मत्तगधव (a प्रेक्षणक) or दानवेलिकीमुदी (१ भाषिका) or सुमद्र हान (१ श्रीगदितम्) have very little to distinguish themselves from the ordinary रूपक types. But this should not appear strange, as these later उपरूपकs, though they are based on the earlier नृत्य types, show a reflection (as has been suggested above) of the ordinary रूपक types, which must have influenced them greatly.

Let us now survey all the उपरूपकs and see their interrelations as well as their relations with the regular रूपक types. I have already mentioned

more than once that my main thesis in this volume is to prove a gradual evolution of our Drama i.e. of *नृत्य* from the *उपनृत्य* and of *उपनृत्य* from the *नृत्य* types. In considering the general development of the *नृत्य*, we have taken the *माग* type to be the most primitive, out of which other types have evolved. I shall deal with the point more elaborately when I come to discuss the origin of our Drama, but for the present, I wish to point out that as in the case of *नृत्य*, so too, in the case of *नृत्य* types, *माग* seems to be the most primitive type. Our lists show that both *माग* and *मणिक्का* have been recognised as *उपनृत्य*, and that *दोन्विका*, an *उपनृत्य*, is a variant of *मणिक्का*. Both Abh and BP have given a terrible character to *माग*, in which violent movements of limbs are prescribed, while BP's *मणिक्का*, which in essence is the same as Abh's *दोन्विका*, has been pronounced as a gentle type. Of course, to SD only *मणिक्का* with its graceful features, is known. The terrible *माग* is a matter of by-gone period in SD's age.<sup>1</sup> Thus it seems that in very primitive stage *माग* had been recognised in two distinct aspects, one the terrible, being represented by *माग* and the other the gentle, represented by *मणिक्का*. On these two types—terrible and gentle—all the other *उपनृत्य* (*नृत्य*-types), I think, are based. Abh's classifica-

- 1 This will explain the above-mentioned silence of SD as in 1's age no such distinction existed in practice.
- 2 Keith in his *Sanskrit Drama* describes the *उपनृत्य* at P 351. On reading his description of the *उपनृत्य*, it will be seen that he too considers them as musical only but he has not distinguished between *नृत्य* and *उपनृत्य* types, clearly.

tion of the types mentioned by him, as उद्धत, मद्युग and their combinations, preserves this principle, which seems to be fairly old, from Abb's quotation itself. Our रस can be classified as suitable to the उद्धत or the मद्युग type. All our दीप्तस्य- i.e. वीर, रोद, मयानक and वीभत्स-are suitable for the उद्धत type, and गृत्तर, हास्य and वरुण are, by their very nature, gentle, while भद्रमुन may be taken as a mixed type. If we bear this distinction in mind, we shall find all the उपरूपक as conforming to the उद्धत or gentle type, the first being represented by भाग उपरूपक and the second by भागिका उपरूपक. It is on this understanding that in the foregoing table, I have characterised each of the varieties as मद्युग or उद्धत. All मद्युग types can be traced to भागिका and all उद्धत types can be traced to भाग (उद्धत). This I shall now proceed to show by a detailed analysis of the नृत्य types. (In so doing, I shall call the भाग of BP as the उद्धत भाग type and भागिका of BP as the मद्युग भाग type.)

दोम्की, it will be seen, is a mere variant of the मद्युग भाग type.

गवक and नाट्यगवक present the following features: five characters, various languages, उत्तरोत्तर and वीभत्स. One view wants 16, 12 or 8 heroines. गृत्तर has been considered prominent in this type. हास्य is too, are allowed. All these features point to a मद्युग type and many heroines, उत्तरोत्तर and हास्य is like these types to भागिका type, which is मद्युग. Though as a नृग type गवक might have been very primitive, as it is, in one way or the other, connected with वृष्ण's

गुरु', as an उदयनक it seems to go with the मर्त्यक type. प्रसन्नक, with its charming sports and drinks, वीर and युद्ध as मृत्यु and दान, बेट and बेट as heroes, is a मनुष्यक type, leaning more towards the मनुष्य भगवत type. It shows some further development, as BP's third type and SD's type show two acts प्रेक्षक with its one act, but with no definite instructions about मृत्यु, is a semi-मनुष्यक type and as such a mere variant of मनुष्यक as has been actually pointed out in BP. As a matter of fact, मनुष्यक (a purely musical type), प्रेक्षक (a half-developed मनुष्यक type) and प्रसन्नक (an उदयनक) are all inter-connected and all can be reduced to the above मनुष्य भगवत type.

केशव, with many heroes and many heroines, being reminiscent of the गुरुक and नाट्यगुरुक, shows clearly an affinity with मनुष्य भगवत type particularly in view of SD's injunction that it should have one hero clever in speech, which would apply to our मनुष्य भगवत, which itself is a मनुष्यक type.

उदयनक seems to be a mixed type, leaning more on the मनुष्यक side, as all the मृत्यु prescribed by BP show but SD's injunction that according to some, it should have बहुमनस makes it a mixed type.

कव्य is a मनुष्यक type but one from which, our उदयनक has evolved. The features that it should have विद्वान् or मनुष्य or वीर as a hero, that its heroine

3 See Note A at the end of this chapter.

4 प्रेक्षक according to SD having no मृत्यु etc but having विद्वान् and मनुष्य is a मनुष्यक type and as such may be the original of मनुष्यक type.

may be a कुलजा or a वेश्या and that हास्य and शृङ्गार may prevail there, are also the distinguishing elements of प्रकृष्ण, which, however, is very complicated and elaborate on account of its ten acts, while वाक्य is an elementary type with its one act

पारिजातकम्, which has been recognised only by BP and which presents the features of having a noble hero, वीर and शृङ्गार रस, eight to four heroines essentially suited to शृङ्गार and the दण्डरासक dance, shows a predominant मयूढ character, only the वीर gives it a mixed colour

सङ्गापक is almost a complete रूपक type as described by BP as well as SD (It is therefore, not very strange that भगवद्गुणम् should include it in the list of its ten रूपक) A close scrutiny reveals its resemblance with समवकार. As a matter of fact, there is very little ground to distinguish it from समवकार as far as the theory goes. Its plot must be renowned or imaginary or mixed, it can have three to four acts, its hero should be angry or पापवृद्ध, trying to meet with वपटयुद्ध and there must be ताल, विद्रव and वपट in the different acts. All these are the features which a समवकार may well have, only that समवकार with its regulated duration of time and acts is a more conventionalised and complicated form. Both सङ्गापक and समवकार, however, belong to the उद्भूत भाग type as their very basis is on दीप्त रस.

शिल्पक, with its रस other than हास्य and शृङ्गार and a secondary hero connected with cremation ground, evinces clearly an उद्भूत type, which is corro-

borated by Abh's description of सिद्ध (same verse is seen in BP as an alternative definition of सिद्ध) according to which a dancer sings of the haughty deeds of her husband. Of course a gentle touch is allowed, but उद्धन seems to be the primary feature. This, too, is a somewhat developed type with its four acts and 27 अङ्गs, but it is rather difficult to indicate its connection with any of the later स्वरूपा.

गोप्त्री is essentially a मन्थ type. Its nine or ten heroes who should be प्रकृत, five or six beautiful heroines, erotic रस, soft वैशिष्ट्य and मागती वृत्ति, and imaginary but not very noble plot, preserve enough elements to show its affinity with the मन्थ भाग type. That this form is very primitive and represents one of the cow-herd dances of दृष्टा, is clear from the verse quoted in ND and others, though that verse shows some terrible element.

कन्यवती with its हास्य and गुह्य, with its विट and पीडन, with its वासकसत्ता or अभिसारिका heroine, approximates the मन्थ भाग type.

श्रीगन्धर्भ with its famous hero and plot, and prominent विप्रलम्भ seems to be a mixed type, though it does not show any उद्धन element. Its कुलजा heroine and विप्रलम्भ रस are quite distinct features.

दुर्गन्धि of which मञ्जि and विनयिका are the obvious variants, has been pronounced as a ध्रुवकथा, and the fact that it has evolved out of a prose-story, is enough to distinguish it from all other varieties. Of course, the लम्बाय prescribed in the case of विलासिका and चेलगुह्य in the case of मञ्जि, make it



approach the मदन type, while the प्राम्य manners of हृती in दुर्मेलिक and विरूपक and विट in मल्लिका show their coarser nature

रामाकीट and प्रेरण have never reached the उपरूपक stage, they remained mere dances

The above analysis will show that in most cases there are very few distinguishing marks. In fact, the ground of distinction in each case is very meagre and very often one variety may be mixed up with the other. हरीशक, for instance, has very little to distinguish itself from रासक, with which it is often confounded. गोष्ठी again has almost nothing to preserve its individuality. It is akin to भाणिका and रासक. In fact, भाणिका, रासक<sup>5</sup>, हरीशक and गोष्ठी—all these four seem to have an equal right to antiquity and thus to be regarded as primitive dance-types. It is likely that these four are the later distinctions of one original dance but it is very difficult at this date, from the scanty data that we possess to point out the original type. We must be satisfied for the present, by pointing out similarities and points of affinity. From this viewpoint, these four essentially represent one type. But for reasons of convenience and others that I shall point out later I take भाणिका to represent the original type. Thus we will have two original नृत्य types—one gentle type represented by BP's भाणिका and the other a terrible type represented by BP's भाण , and we have

<sup>5</sup> See Note B at the end of this chapter

<sup>6</sup> On comparing the dramatical structure of our भाणिका

seen above the possibility of reducing all the known *उपव्यक्त*s to one or the other of these two types

with these four it will be seen that *हर्षात्मक* when it developed into the *माय* type had nothing to distinguish itself from *माय रूपक* *हर्षात्मक* according to SD has one hero clever in speech (which would suggest his resorting to *वाकाशमन्त्रि*) and many heroines which is essentially the nature of later *माय रूपक* *गोष्ठी* too according to SD has many heroines etc., which feature is present in *मायव्यक्त* Thus *रासक वाद्यरासक*, *मायिका गोष्ठी* and *हर्षात्मक* have all contributed to the final nature of *मायव्यक्त* There is however one point which is very important in this connection I think that the name *माय* is etymologically significant It denotes a distinct element of speech into it and bearing this in mind, I think it to be likely that *गोष्ठी* *हर्षात्मक* and *रसक* as *नय* forms were earlier to evolve than *माय* or *मायिका* but when dialogue was first added to the elements already present in the *नय* forms their combined evolutes came to be known as *माय* Thus as an *उपव्यक्त* form *माय* was the first to evolve

### Note A—On *रास* and *रासक*

*रास* to-day has been considered a peculiarity of the Gujarati ladies

We shall see further that there are reasons to believe that this *रास* first originated in *मौर्य* This *रास* dance as it is played to-day by the Gujarati ladies consists of several types many of which are modern innovations by the present artists but the underlying form is undoubtedly very old Several ladies in appropriate garbs turning round a central object (in certain cases the object might be absent) sing some song mostly pertaining to *राज्य*'s sports with *गोष्ठी* in accompaniment with beating drums, which would be helpful to them in keeping time They go round and the movements vary according to the sentiment of the song and it may be that even in one and the same song the vari-

ations in movement may be effected, when the sentiment, in the poem takes a marked turn. The whole process becomes very charming and has already earned sincere appreciations from the lovers of art, all over India. A variation of the above practice occurs when males and females both take part in the dance, which originally represented वृष्ण and शेषी, the feature being known to the Sanskrit Dramaturgists in the following old verse, very often quoted as the definition of हस्तिनक or रासक

यमपदनेन वृत्तं शेष्या हस्तिनकं तु तत्प्रादु ।

तत्रैवो नेता रणाद्गोपस्त्रीयामिव मुरारि ॥

That this practice seems to be very old is apparent from its being connected with वृष्ण's dance अथर्व in रासे हरिदि सरसाविहगम् etc., preserves the knowledge of the practice it is evidently known to मागधन

Of course in वृष्ण's time it must have existed only as a वृत्त form, as its remnant the रास of Gujarat shows. That it was a very favourable pastime for the young people seems to be true for it has been very often described as attracting the शेषी of वृत्त and many a devotee of वृष्ण has hankered after the enjoyment of this रास. The Gujarati devotee नरसिंह म्हेना in the fifteenth century has a legend woven round him that he actually witnessed the रास in वृष्ण's heaven and that he was standing in the centre of the circle with a torch in his hand and was absorbed so much in the spectacle that he became unconscious of the flames reaching down to his hand and burning it till वृष्ण himself saw and remedied it. All these popular legends and stories prove the immense popularity of this form of dance and its sanctity by its association with वृष्ण. That नान्यरासक may well have been a later evolve is possible as its very name suggests though there is evidence of its having existed as a mere dance form as the theory attests. But that रासक in its origin was an elementary dance form is almost certain and does not require any further reference. A

variation of this type is what is popularly called *द्विज* and which is the same as *द्विज* occurring under *परीक्षा* in BP P 263

Very often on account of similarity, of sound **᳚** is connected with the word **᳚** and is even derived from it. But this derivation is not scientific. In very primitive times the theory of **᳚** was not known and even otherwise as a dance form **᳚** or **᳚** can have nothing to do with **᳚** it cannot even create **᳚** in the minds of the spectators as the theory points out very well **᳚** is thus not to be derived from **᳚** but from **᳚** a root which means to cry aloud which may refer to the very primitive form of this dance when the proportion of artistic movements and music may not have been still realised and when it must have been practised as a wild dance

**Note B-On रामक and हास्य**

There is some evidence to connect रामक with राम It may be that both are identical terms. रामक is once actually called रामक Again राम the direct remnant of रामक is to-day seen in राम only And there are positive statements showing that रामक first originated in राम Govt Oriental Library at B O R I at Poona possesses three mss. on रामक and in all these three the above tradition is referred to रामक is a treatise believed to be composed by the famous author of रामक रामक (Dr De believes this to be a version of the original abridged by one रामक See Sanskrit Poets I 2n) has the following. (fol 66)

[illegible]

Another MS. written composed by one <sup>1543</sup> a court poet of

Jam Sattarsal (c 1574 A D) has the following (fol 57, 1 15)

ताण्डुना ताण्डव  
 श्वैर दृश्यति रस खण्डपरम्पु मीत्वा स्वय कल्पितम्  
 —वाणसुतामुखा विरिनुता शिक्षापयामास ता  
 सापि द्वावर्तयता कुलेशू सौराष्ट्रनारी च सा  
 मानादेशसमुद्रवा प्रियतमा शिक्षापिता तत्परम्  
 सौराष्ट्रीयशूजनेन भुवि तज्जान प्रसिद्ध व्रमात्

I have filled in some lacunæ seen in this MS, from another MS of रसकौमुदी at G O I, by the kind courtsey of Mr M R Majmudar

NSD has the following (fol 15 1 4 6)

नोविष्य च पार्थाय प्रायच्छद्भूतेतवाहन  
 उपायै कथयै च सोपा नोविष्य एव च  
 नोप्यासौराष्ट्रयोषिद्भ्यो नर्तकेभ्यश्च ता स्त्रिय  
 एव प्रसम्परायात्र नर्तकस्य निरूपकम्

Also compare SR VII, 68 All these references show that नाट्य is connected with सौराष्ट्र So too is रस This is one more point for connecting राहक with नाट्य

CHAPTER VII

*THE ORIGIN OF SANSKRIT DRAMA*

## CHAPTER VIII

### THE ORIGIN OF SANSKRIT DRAMA

**M**ANY attempts have been made, ere now, to fix the exact nature of the origin of our drama, but as yet none seems to have gained general acceptance. The controversy regarding the religious versus secular origin of our drama has occupied the minds of many scholars, but evidence that is brought to bear upon the subject, while far from reliable is wholly indirect and as such fails to carry conviction. So far as we have the knowledge of definite references to drama, all goes well but beyond that is the realm of conjectures and conclusions are drawn from scanty materials. To examine a ritualistic ceremony from a *श्राद्ध* and investigate into the practice of its performance or to search for the nature of the monologues and dialogues in the *ऋग्वेद* with reference to the mode of their recitation, without any definite guide, is to my mind a procedure far from scientific. Our European scholars are loathe to find any reference to the art of Dramatics in *वसिनि* and yet they would jump at *Rgvedic* ages for the origin of drama. But this is not all. They have other lines of attack. They catch hold of one word here and one word there and build ingenious theories on these sandy foundations, only to be pulled down by another equally sandy theory. The word *रोदय* or *रोहिण* or *रप*, detached

from actual drama and dramatic theory can lead us no where. All these attempts, therefore, to my mind, are round about and as such bound to remain unconvincing.

In order to arrive at some definite idea about the character of our earliest drama, I think that we must study the dramatic theory as expounded in our dramaturgical works, and it is in this manner that I take up this consideration of the origin of our drama.

My study of Sanskrit dramaturgy has led me to believe in the gradual development of our नाट्य types from the ऋत types, which in their turn evolved from the primitive उत types<sup>1</sup>. We have seen how, amongst the रूपकs, all the types are likely to have evolved from the भाग रूपक, as also how from amongst the उपरूपकs almost all the types could be reduced to the उद्धत भाग or मयूरा भागिस type. I have now to point out that there runs a common relationship between the रूपकs, and the उपरूपकs as far as their mutual evolution is concerned.

Usually our extant भाग रूपक has a वीट who goes out on some business, passes through the वेशावत, converses with a number of hetærae and attains his object. This means that there were many heroines in a भाग. Our earliest भागs are those that

1 It is not very difficult to show that the terms designating the various उपरूपकs once designated some sort of dance forms or some sort of नाट्याङ्ग. But it is a thesis which I reserve for future treatment.

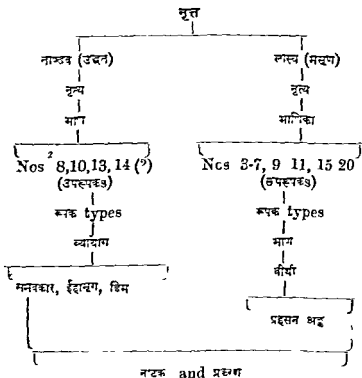


are published in चतुर्भांशे Out of these four, धूर्वविजयसद (whose peculiar character I have already noted) has seven such hetaerae, पद्मविजयम् has about sixteen, पद्मचन्द्रम् fourteen and उदयसिंहसिंह eight This means that from the first our भाग had many heroines, and, though it is possible, in the case of some of the भाग, to point out one particular hetaera in whom the chief विद is interested and who may therefore be called the heroine proper yet the general nature of this type precludes only one heroine So too in some of our existing भाग we have more than one hero, often three or four. Thus this महाभारत has many heroes and many heroines, it is erotic in its very essence, though वीर and शत्रुघ्न are suggested but that was in accordance with the later, not with the earlier theory. This nature of भाग corresponds with the nature of मञ्जरी, which is मञ्जरी, which shows nine or ten threads of the plot (i.e. many heroes and heroines) and which has erotic as the prevailing स्व The theory requires हविर्द्वि to be woven in मञ्जरी and there is a curious coincidence in सुकुन्दानन्द भाग where the chief विद is identified with हृषीकेश and the whole play develops in this double character (But I do not want to suggest that this was the essential part of भाग मञ्जरी, for it was not) All these points of similarity show that our मञ्जरी मञ्जरी उपमञ्जरी is the original, from which the मञ्जरी भाग has drawn most of its elements अञ्जलीमञ्जरी has been probably taken from the नन्दिमञ्जरी type which is the उदय भाग type Thus मञ्जरी gave rise to भाग मञ्जरी and this in its

turn developed into वीथी, भङ्ग and प्रहसन Thus out of the five one-act dramas, four are to be connected with the मद्युग भाणिका, while the remaining one-act type व्यायोग which shows दीप्त रस may be traced to the उद्धत भाण type, and from व्यायोग have been developed the other दीप्त types as has already been pointed out Thus there runs a common thread through all the known रूपक and उपरूपक

With this may be connected the universally acknowledged tradition that नृप, in its origin, was divided into उद्धत and मद्युग types, the first being called ताण्ड्य and the other लास्य and with great plausibility we can trace, in their ultimate forms, our उद्धत types to ताण्ड्य नृप and the मद्युग types to लास्य Following Abh's classification of मद्युग and उद्धत and their mixture we have already tried to reduce all the नृप types to these classes It is further possible to reduce all our रूपक also to one of these types भाण, वीथी and प्रहसन, with their mild erotic रस and gentle elements like ललस्योग are मद्युग समवर्तन, ईहाभ्युग, द्विम and व्यायोग with their haughty रस are clearly उद्धत भङ्ग with its कदम्बरस is mild Of course a variation may occur wherein more than one रस may be employed in one and the same type As a matter of fact these रूपक, as we know them to-day being highly individualised and developed afford great scope for a mixture of रस But we may call a type मद्युग or उद्धत according as it has a mild or haughty रस predominant नाटक and प्रहसन are mostly mixed, though even here it will be possible to point out one particular रस to be promi-

ment. It is thus that we can trace all our dramatic, semi-dramatic, and musical forms to their ultimate two forms—नाट्य and गान्. Here then, the tradition has its fullest justification and provides a key to the history of the evolution of our dramas. If now we tabulate the results of our investigations we shall get the following table



The above table clearly shows the inter-relations of all the known रूपक and उपस्थानक, and the

2 These numbers refer to the serial numbers in the table attached at the beginning of the previous Chapter.

possibility of their being reduced to the ultimate dance forms-तण्डव and लस्य भणिस with its many variant like समर, नाच्यगवक, हठीशक, गोष्ठी etc, was the first to evolve as a नृत्य type, while भाग रूपक was the first to evolve as a रूपक type

But it may be asked what claims has this भाग रूपक to be taken as the first dramatic form to evolve? Why should we not take वीथी or प्रहसन or अङ्क or व्यायोग as the original type? There are considerations which force us to take भाग as the first evoluate of the रूपक type. Let us study the plot-structure of our extant भाग. Of course the theory is very vague when it prescribes that one विट should describe vile incidents experienced by himself or by others, for this gives a vast latitude to the poet, and makes the character of भाग episodic. That is, a भाग will never have a continuous story to develop, but only detached incidents which are patched up together in some interesting manner. This characteristic of भाग is fully preserved in the actual भाग which we possess to-day. Not a single भाग militates against this, as the following analysis shows.

गुप्ताभूषण has been pronounced as typical of the class, and as the earliest भाग known to us with the exception of चतुर्भांगी. In this भाग the chief विट, विलासशेखर starts to partake in the festivities celebrated in the honour of अनङ्गमञ्जरी, the daughter of वनक-मञ्जरी, a hetaera, on her attaining puberty. On the way, he passes through the वेशवाट and meets with a number of other hetaerae, indulges in smart

conversation with them and finally reaches अनङ्गमञ्जरी's place. He thus converses with thirteen गणिकाs on the way, five of whom are introduced with their spouses. Thus there are thirteen or fourteen incidents, and the विट does not forget to describe ram-fight, cock-fight, boxing and different stages of the day.

In शुभा'निरुद्ध, "मुद्ररङ्गदत्त", the hero, is vexed at the departure of his beloved हेमङ्गी, but is assured of meeting her again, despite her return to her husband. He makes the usual promenade in the hetaerae's street, has the usual imaginary' conversations and describes the ordinary sights, including snake-charmers and magic shows of gods and their mountains and so forth. Finally he succeeds in rejoining हेमङ्गी." The above is the main incident of the नाट्य, but it has some minor threads too. मन्दारक, a friend of the hero, had an adventure with a चित्रदेव, with whose wife he had been on terms of intimacy, and he describes his experiences at some length. Then the hero goes through the

- 3 This is not the proper word, for though when the विट converses with the hetaerae on the stage there is no other actor present on the stage and so far the conversation may seem imaginary, yet as far as the plot is concerned all this is supposed to be real. It is only the simpler and more primitive dramatic technique of नाट्य which lends it the character of an imaginary talk otherwise neither from the viewpoint of the विट nor from the viewpoint of the audience is the conversation meant to be imaginary and the whole interest centres round the unseen characters who are, to all intents and purposes real.

वैशवाट and about fifteen incidents are described and then he sees his friend कण्वसूक्त, to whom he narrates his experiences with हेमाङ्गी. Thus this भाग too shows a number of incidents.

युद्धासर्वस्व is a variant of the above भाग, for in it the hero, अनङ्गशेखर, being separated from his beloved कनकलता, goes in a dejected mood through the वैशवाट and converses with about thirteen hetaerae. He then meets his friend वसन्तक, who describes his love-affair with an unknown lady in details, and finally the hero attains his desire.

सखिन, which makes more pleasant reading, has a chief विट as the hero, who has promised his friend मन्दाक to look after his wife in his absence. He goes about with her to a temple and then to his own house, after escorting the lady to her own abode. But soon he comes out, wanders in the street, talks and describes at large and finally after accepting the invitation of a lady from a neighbouring town to pay her a visit, goes back home to find the lovers united. There are about fourteen incidents in this play.

सुहृन्दानन्द is one of the lengthiest भागs, in which the hero, भुजङ्गशेखर, indentifying himself with वृष्ण, describes in double entendres his adventures with various hetaerae. He being separated from his beloved, wanders about and meets his friend वसन्तक who is running away from one कमलापीठ, with whose wife he had passed that night. He describes his amour with the lady at some length. About

fifteen incidents are described and then once more comes a friend of the hero कन्दर्प, who describes his experiences in minute details with one कमलिनी. Some more incidents are also seen grouped together making in all twenty threads.

This shows that our माग had no one continuous plot, but a series of unconnected incidents, described one after the other. This feature is seen in our earlier मागs too. In उभयामित्रिका, the earliest<sup>4</sup> extant माग, the विट is requested to reconcile the love-quarrel arisen between कुवेरदत्त, the son of समरदत्त and नारायणादना, and he, starting for

- 4 That these four मागs are earlier than all the other known मागs, is obvious by the fact that, पदमङ्गलम् and कूर्मविजयम् are referred to by writers in the tenth and eleventh centuries and पद्मप्रभाकरम् by कवय in the sixth century while there is no reason why उभयामित्रिका should not be assigned to कवयि whose name is actually found in the colophon to the work. The माग itself bears at least two marks to vouchsafe its antiquity. The विट who is here called वैदिकानन्द, meets on his way a परित्यागिका who does not seem to be a Buddhist nun but a follower of some Brahmanic system, probably of वैष्णविक, as otherwise 'मोक्षैवैविकावनेन' would be out of place. Further on she remarks

वत्पदार्थद्विजने सामान्यतममात्रं तुल्यं प्रतीयते ।

Now we know that the later वैदिक theory acknowledged seven पदार्थs but the earlier सामान्यतममात्रं allowed only six to which वत्पदार्थ was added later on by the time of विजयम् (Compare Ket's Atomic Theory P. 180 also Radhakrishnan Indian Philosophy II P. 155). This will put the date of this play considerably earlier than the 10th century. Again there is a statement (in the play) which enumerates the different पदार्थs thus (P. 13)

the purpose, passes through the street of hetaerae, converses with seven or eight of them and finally learns from the maid of नारायणदत्ता that the lovers had reunited, for, both of them being put in psychologically anxious mood, set out to meet one

यस्यास्तावत्प्रथमं रूपध्यानव्योवनयुनिकात्वादिना युष्माकां सम्पत्  
चतुर्विंशतिभिरसिद्धिं द्वात्रिंशद्विधो हस्तप्रचारः अष्टांशविव निरीक्षण  
श्च स्थानानि गतिद्वय (त्रय) अष्टौ रसा त्रयो गीतशक्तिरादित्या  
इत्येवमादीनि नृत्तगानि त्वदाश्रयेणालङ्कारानि ।

This distinctly enumerates 4 kinds of अभिनय, 32 kinds of हस्तप्रचार, 18 kinds of निरीक्षणम्, 6 स्थानs, 2 gaits, 8 रसs, and 3 गीतशक्ति etc. Out of these 4 kinds of अभिनय and 8 रसs are acknowledged by all while 6 स्थानs (of धार्यs) are prescribed by मल्ल. But about the rest, NS has 64 kinds of हस्तप्रचार (सयुत 13 असयुत 24 उत्तहस्तस 27—64) and 36 kinds of रसि is against 32 हस्तप्रचारs and 18 निरीक्षणs in this drama. This too may point to an early period when भरत's treatise was not taken as authoritative.

Judged from this point of view this drama seems to belong to an early date.

That पद्मप्रभक्तम् reveals traits of a style similar to that of the author of मन्दोदरिका is borne out by some internal evidence. On P. 10 is described one पवित्रक as

रात्रपागाप्रविदितजनसम्पन्ने पवित्रकस्य सत्यदीनार्द्रवसनं मनुचितसर्वांगो  
मात्रिकाद्वयमगुणित्वेन निवाय पत्रवगतिरपि त्रिकास्तादृशं स्थितं

This trick it will be seen, is utilised in मन्दोदरिका, in the case of शार्ङ्गक. Same trick is once more resorted to in this drama with regard to ईषिक (P. 15). Both these dramas—मन्दोदरिका and पद्मप्रभक्तम्—show a period when Buddhism was definitely ridiculed. These points together with the fact that this drama is referred to by बाण in the sixth century places it fairly early. मन्दोदरिका with whom the plot of the play starts seems to have been a renowned figure in ancient India (cf ND 119 also IIIQ VII 3).



another and are reconciled. In शूद्रक's पद्मसामुद्रिकम्, the विट is requested by his friend मूलदेव who was also called वर्गीपुत्र, to bring about his reconciliation with देवमेवा, with whom some sort of misunderstanding was created. And the विट, who seems to be called रास, boasting to be the friend of मूलदेव, who was a great मदराचार्य, goes about the town and converses with five or six persons acquainted with him and with ten or eleven hetærae. Then he goes to देवदत्ता and by clever strategical speech manages to eke out the information that she loved मूलदेव. In धूर्तविरसत्ताद, incidents are very few—only seven. In पादतन्त्रिकम् a विट receives the information that a स्त्रीगङ्गोद्विषिष्णुनाम had been kicked by a यक्षिका and for the expiation of this pollution a committee was appointed on which the विट in question was taken as a member. He wanders, narrates some seventeen incidents and finally attends the meeting which has already prescribed a प्रायश्चित्त for विष्णुनाम. Thus all our मण्ड, without an exception, are very peculiar in having no plot, but a series of incidents. This, then, is a distinct feature of मण्ड, and one not being present in any other शास्त्र type (समवहार has a feature like this but the incidents are detached there in respect of the various acts, not in one and the same act) shows an extremely primitive character.

Another characteristic in which मण्ड is to be distinguished from the other शास्त्र types is its monologous nature. Strictly speaking a monologue is likely to be dry and utterly incapable of developing the plot and it is for this reason

that the device known as अकाशमण्डित is resorted to by the Sanskrit actors. This makes it possible for the poet to introduce other characters, who though not actually present on the stage, are depicted as talking to the only one actor, the वित. This monologous character of भाग needs an expert actor to play the role of वित, but at the same time dispenses away with almost all the theatrical accessories for an audience who can imagine the character and the conversations represented as taking place between them, as real, can certainly visualise the scenes and other devices. Theatre, in very primitive times must have been some open space, converted for the time being into some sort of stage and such a stage cannot boast of a रङ्ग and a नेपथ्यगृह and a रङ्गपीठ and a रङ्गशीर्ष and such other accessories. Such a theatre, void of almost all the theatrical accessories<sup>5</sup>, must have rendered necessary the outcome of a form of entertainment such as is represented by भाग. Even a casual glance through any published भाग would show its extremely poor dramatic technique. As to the stage-directions there are very few and these too are of a very elementary character. Most of the effect is created by descriptions, which as we

5 And in later times when our drama grew into a full fledged नाट्य, our theatre, though not a mere open space remained comparatively poor as regards these theatrical devices. It is however possible that when our drama grew to its fullest height, these devices were provided for in some manner or the other. See my paper Hindu Theatre IHQ vol VIII, 480 ff

shall soon see is another characteristic peculiar to मय. That the monologous nature of मय requires an expert actor would at once be realised. He was the only actor and he had to represent various emotions and moods experienced by the different characters and also different situations through which these characters passed. That such a monologue may well have been very primitive on account of its popular nature has been suggested more than once<sup>6</sup>

In spite of the peculiar device of वाङ्मयविनोद invented by the Sanskrit actor for relieving the monotony which would be produced by an absolute soliloquy (to which character our मय would be reduced if this device is not resorted to,) our मय really lack in smart and varied dialogue. As a matter of fact there is very little of a real type of dramatic dialogue in the मय. Dialogue in मय is forced and artificial and presents itself in the peculiar form of descriptions. These मय are all descriptive in essence, and this is a very natural consequence of the monologue. A poet writing a मय can never afford to lose an opportunity to describe. Not only is it that he has to describe

6 Out of the theorists मयवैद gives it a popular character in which he follows his guru वैदवैद who remarks (P 325) that this type is mostly for the diversion of the ordinary people (वृण्णव). Keith too acknowledges the primitive character of this type. "The monologue मय has also an obviously popular character and origin." (*Sanskrit Drama* P 348)

various scenes like ram-fight or wrestling or sunset or sunrise or beauty of the dawn, but even in the dialogue between the chief विट and the hetaerae, where would appear the fullest latitude for the poet to break the fetters of this limitation, an essentially descriptive nature prevails. The poet would describe either the beauty of the lady or her sports or her various moods and where description is not present our भाग्य at once assume a narrative form which is sure to bring lengthy descriptions in its train. Take up any भाग्य and this will be borne out. The usual भाग्य would begin with a विट describing the effects of dawn and early activities of the people. Then he would describe the वेश्या and then would follow the various descriptions of sports etc., of the ladies. He may often meet a friend on the way and then the friend will enter into a narrative of his experiences with some ladies. Then he would pass from the street of the hetaerae and on the way would describe the cock-fight etc. It is thus clear that the भाग्य was by nature descriptive.

Though the theory is not clear, there appears sufficient grounds to believe that भाग्य was usually composed in Sanskrit only, as against the varied languages in all the other types of रस. All our भाग्य prove this to the hilt, and inspite of the fact that some of our later भाग्य have introduced Prakrit at certain places, it seems that in the earlier भाग्य Sanskrit was the rule. Out of the four भाग्य in चतुर्भाषी, only पादतादितम् has used

Prakrit and that too only twice in the course of the whole play, which is certainly very lengthy for a one-act drama. And the way in which Prakrit is used in these later नाट्य shows that it was a novel experiment on their part owing to the influence of the शब्द which had certainly fully developed then. It therefore seems to be quite possible that Prakrit had no place in our original नाट्य, but later writers being under the strong influence of conventional models of the other शब्द tried to introduce this feature in the नाट्य. This point naturally leads to another consideration. In नाट्य the actual actor on the stage, before the eyes of the audience was वित्त only, and though he conversed with various hetaerae and also with persons naturally belonging to a lower strata of the society, it was he who repeated their speeches. In such cases the plot had enough opportunities to introduce the Prakrit, if that was the established convention. But, if our above suggestion is correct, नाट्य was the earliest dramatic form to evolve and at that date no precise convention had sprung up with regard to the use of various languages. Our theory is elaborate about the use of languages by various characters, and वित्त, who is the only actor in a नाट्य appears to have been allowed Sanskrit in earlier days, but was restricted to प्राकृत in later days. NS in describing a वित्त does not give any injunction about the language to be used by him, but BP expressly describes him as प्राकृतभाषी. Out of our earliest

dramas, other than भाग्य, चारुदत्त and मृच्छकटिक have a विट as a character, and in both these, he speaks in Sanskrit only. In नागवन्दम् which is the only other drama in which a विट figures, Prakrit is resorted to by him. This is conclusive enough to show that विट was allowed Sanskrit in earlier days. विट is always described as a man of accomplishment, a man of town, a नागवक्त्र, and it is quite compatible with this character of his that he is allowed the use of Sanskrit. If this be true, i.e. if the विट was allowed Sanskrit, a form of drama like भाग्य, in which he alone figured as the actor, must have been entirely composed in Sanskrit.

Taking all these points—the episodic nature of भाग्य, and consequent large number of heroes and heroines, the monologue, the very primitive dramatic technique, the descriptive nature of the plot and the employment of Sanskrit only to the entire exclusion of Prakrit together with the general scheme of evolution of the कल्पस already outlined by me, I am inclined to think that out of all the कल्पस, भाग्य was the first to evolve.

But though the भाग्य may be taken as earlier than व्यायोग or वीर्य or अह, why, it may be asked, should we not take the प्रहसन as the first dramatic type to evolve? It has the same loose dramatic technique suggesting an open-air theatre. It has the same coarse nature indicating its popular character. But taking the entire line of evolution as detailed in the foregoing pages, our working

basis that मण रूपक was the first form to evolve amongst the रूपकs, fits in very well with the whole scheme. Therefore, I am still inclined to take मण as the first dramatic evolve. For, the one respect in which मण differs from प्रहसन, is the large number of actors that the latter is allowed. To my mind only one actor shows a very primitive character. Then, again though our later प्रहसनs show an extremely low state of the society, our earlier ones as represented by मन्त्रिलक्ष and भगवद-ज्जुक्ष्म, are dignified in a way, inspite of the lower characters figuring therein. So too the loose theatrical technique is seen in the later प्रहसनs, but the earlier ones show a settled conventional dramatic technique, such as is presupposed by any नाटक or प्रकाश. Then again प्रहसन shows a variety of languages and is in certain cases mostly in Prakrit. For all these reasons मण seems to be more primitive than प्रहसन<sup>7</sup>

- 7 I must here point out that though not attested by theory our earlier मण has a certain element of हास्य present in them. शूद्रक in his पद्मनाभनक्षत्रम् depicts his विट as an accomplished person a नाट्यक but at the same time gives him some traits which are later confined to विदूषक. The burst of laughter accompanied by the sounds 'ही ही मो' which every audience would expect at the entrance of a विदूषक and which has later become a regular feature with him, is thrice seen in this विट's case (P 12, 15, 19). The attempt at satirising the degraded position of the Brahmanas which has become a prominent method of exciting humour on the Sanskrit stage is fully seen in पद्मनाभनक्षत्रम्, where a foolish orthodox Brahmana being kicked by a lady, goes to the Brahmanas and विटs or expiation, and thus

भण thus seems to me the first dramatic type to evolve and if, now, we want to arrive at the original nature of our नाट्य type, from the foregoing discussion we will find the following characteristics of our first drama

- (1) it was entirely in Sanskrit,
- (2) it was descriptive in nature,
- (3) it was monologous in form,
- (4) and lastly, it was secular in matter.

But I wish to make this point quite clear \* We have seen that as the हस्त form भण was the first to develop and both theory and practice prove, beyond a shred of doubt that भण हस्त was secular in its plot Even in the case of other one act dramas, the theory prescribes secular subjects with regard to प्रहसन and वीरी In व्यसो, अद् and डिम the plot is required to be renowned, but no where a religious phase is indicated डिम has gods etc as heroes and it may have been religious but all the other one act plays were secular in their very nature Thus our नाट्य form was undoubtedly secular in its origin But I have to submit that evidence has another tale to tell with regard to the द्वय types We have taken भण, भणिक, रास, गोष्ठी and हर्षाश्रम as the earliest द्वय types to evolve Out of these भण and भणिक are required to have द्विविधि

causes much mirth and other नाट्य almost regularly introduce one such incident at least in which some नाट्य student is thus ridiculed This feature of causing mirth in the audience by ridiculing the so called learned class has become regular with the प्रहसन



etc., in their plot रत्न was connected with वृत्त. So were गीता and हरीशचन्द्र. Thus all these elementary and early वृत्त types seem to have been religious. And, though it is quite possible that our earliest वृत्त forms may have been both religious and secular i.e. they may have been resorted to on religious as well as secular occasions<sup>8</sup>, (for there being no plot, these वृत्त forms had no claim to be called religious or otherwise) yet the tradition connects them with शिव and पार्वती and this may lend colour to its being connected mainly with religious occasions.

If this theory of gradual evolution of our वृत्त, वृत्त and नट्य types as detailed above, is correct, we will have to distinguish between certain stages of growth even in the नट्य types themselves. There will be roughly four distinct periods.

(1) The earliest phase of the evolution of our नट्य types would be represented by a form which required only one actor and one act.

(2) नट्य, in its second period, required many actors but still had only one act.

(3) Third period is represented by less complicated types with many acts.

(4) Finally, the fourth phase is represented by the full-fledged नट्य and प्रहसन types, which, when fully developed, gradually sent the other

<sup>8</sup> Aba actually admits this, for he says that नट्यकर्म like वृत्त etc. were performed in the presence of some king or in some temple court yard (अबाने व्याख्यान क. Abh 177-8)

lesser types into oblivion

And, now, we are in a position to answer the question raised by us at the outset of this volume about our drama being still-born. I have used this word purposely. A still-born child is that who at its very birth is dead i.e. devoid of all powers to develop further. So far we have taken the plays of भस and कालिदास to be the earliest and these dramas do create an impression that they have already reached that stage of dramatic development, which is the highest and for which there is no further development possible. Our earliest drama thus seems to be still-born but the very theory of gradual evolution of our drama, as propounded by me, falsifies all such notions. The earliest specimen that we possess is a भण and, though we may not be fortunate enough to recover other representatives of the other early types, it is quite certain that the dramas of भस and कालिदास represent the fourth and the last stage in the evolution of our drama. This means that at the commencement of the Christian era or a little earlier, we are already in possession of fully developed dramas which have at their back three distinct stages of evolution. Therefore the existence of a long chain of dramas representative of each of these periods will have to be admitted. This will put the actual beginning of our Drama in a very distant age—how distant, it is difficult to say at present. Moreover our drama was, at first, musical and added speech

to it eater and in this light it is likely that the Rgvedic dialogues and monologues represent our elementary द्वय types, the monologue being sung by one expert actor who may have been a मन्त्रि and the dialogue being carried on by two opposite parties. But into this realm of conjecture we shall not enter, just at present

- 9 One of the earliest<sup>+</sup> uses of the word भाष in the sense of speech is seen in बृहदारण्यकोपनिषद् Cf. द्वावाम्नात्मनोऽस्मदीत्यत्र चतस्रः पञ्चदशैर्ब्रह्म । तं जगन्निन्दन् ब्रह्म भाष कोटिर्नैव शब्दमवत् ॥ 1, 2, 4

## *APPENDICES*

# APPENDIX I

## LIST OF PLAYS AS QUOTED IN DRAMATUEGICAL TEXTS

(Figures refer to Page nos)

अनर्थगंधर्व ND 193, BP 232, SD 63	SD 64, 88 DR 76, 79 etc
अनगसेनाहरिनन्दिनी (प्रकरण, श्रीशक्ति-कुमारविरचित) ND 95	कदम्बकन्दल (अद्भुत) SD 286
अभिमान्यन BP 282	कनकवर्तमानाव (द्वितीयक) SD 106
अभिनवगणव (धर्मस्वामिविरचित) ND 155	कन्दर्पकृति (प्रहसन) SD 103
अभिरामरुषव RS 265, 273	कौमुदी (सूत्रक) BP 269, DR 83
अभिप्रायशकुन्तल ND 57, 69, 154, BP 237, 233 228, SD 64, 66, 69, 70, DR 65, 66 etc Abh 39, 280 etc	कलान्वितम् (गमयम्) SD 105
अच्युतमन्यन BP 250, NS IV, 2	कलिकृति (प्रहसन) BP
अर्जुनवर्णि ND 172	कान्दन (मार्गिका) SD 107
आनन्दकोश (प्रहसन) RS 278	कुन्दभागा BP 223, SD 65
इन्दुलेखा (नाटिका) ND 114, 143	कुपुनशेखरविजय (हिन्दु) BP 253, SD 100
इन्दुलेखा (बीषी) BP 251, 231	कुन्दभागा BP 283, ND 80 83 etc
उत्तरचरित ND 39, 100, etc DR 27, 28 etc	केलिरैवत (हर्षित) BP 267, SD 106
उदयनवर्णिम् SD 85	कौमुदीनिर्वाणन्द (प्रकरण) ND 70
उदानकुञ्जरम् (उद्वाप्यक) BP 266	कौञ्ज सान्द्रम् (श्रीगङ्गिन्) SD 105
उदानगणव ND 66, 111 etc	गङ्गावर्द्धिका (पारिजातलत) BP 286
	गङ्गावर्द्धिका (उत्तरवर्द्धिका) BP 252

- गुणमाला Abh 177  
 गृह्यशास्त्रादि (नाटिका) SD 93  
 गौडविजय (काव्य) BP 263  
 चण्डकौशिक SD 75  
 चन्द्रकला (नाटिका, मम) SD 90  
 चित्रोत्पलावलम्बितक (प्रकरण, अमात्य-  
 शत्रुकविरचित) ND 95  
 चूडामणि (डोमिका) Abh 173  
 KS P 328  
 छलितराम ND 98, 104, 150  
 etc. SD 102, DR 27, 83, 85  
 जानकीराघव SD 77  
 जामदग्न्यजय ND 123  
 तादृशता BP 243  
 तापमवतराज BP 34, 43 etc  
 Abh 217, 298, 338  
 ताकोद्धारण (डिम) BP 248  
 त्रिपुरदह (डिम) BP 248, SD  
 99 NS IV, 10  
 त्रिपुरमर्दन (प्रेक्षणक) BP 263  
 दक्षिणादृशतादिहयक ND 53  
 देवीनन्दगुप्त ND 71 (धृतिदेवी  
 occurs as a character)  
 181 etc  
 देवीपरिणय BP 223, 227  
 देवीमहादेव (उद्योप्यक) BP 266  
 SD 104  
 धनजयविजय (व्यायोग) RS 261,  
 287  
 धूर्तचरित्र (प्रहसन) SD 103  
 नर्मवती (नाट्यरासक) SD 104  
 नलविलास ND 40, 45  
 नागानन्द ND 45, 68 etc DR  
 46, 50 etc  
 नृसिंहविजय (प्रेक्षणक) BP 263  
 पयोधिमन्यन (समवहार) RS 290  
 पद्मावतीपरिणयम् (प्रकरण) BP 243  
 पद्मावती RS 263, 266  
 पाण्डवानन्द ND 149, BP 230,  
 RD 82  
 पास्तुतितक (भाग) Ath 178  
 पार्थविजय ND 76, 81  
 पुष्पदूयितक ND 50, 94  
 पुष्पमाला (मम तातपादानां) SD 63  
 पुष्पभूयितम् (प्रकरण, वञ्जितनायक, कुल-  
 स्त्री) SD 98  
 प्रतिमन्त्रु(नि)रुद्ध (भीमीमदेरमुनो-  
 वंमुनागस्य) ND 115, 116  
 प्रबोधचन्द्रोदय RS 265  
 प्रभावती (नाटिका, मम) SD 73, 79  
 82

- प्रसन्नराघव RS 258  
 प्रयोगाभ्युदय ND 140  
 प्रियदर्शिका BP 244, DR 74  
 76 Abh 312  
 बकुलवीथी BP 251  
 बालचरित्र SD 73  
 बालरामायण SD 62, 66 BP 240  
 237, 233  
 बालिकावचितकम् ND 138, 146  
 बिन्दुमती (दुर्मलिका) SD 106  
 मदलेखा BP 238  
 मनोरमावन्तराज (मीमंसाविरचिन) ND  
 144  
 मञ्जि मङ्गल (अस्मदुपज्ञ) ND प्रकरण  
 171  
 महानाटक BP 241, 279 DR  
 (दुर्मनाटकम्) 44  
 महेश्वरानन्द RS 275  
 माणिस्यवटिका (कल्पवली) P 268  
 माधववीथिका (वीथी) SR 290  
 माञ्जीमारव ND 67, 120, BP  
 210, 243, 280, SD 68, 69  
 DR 11, 45 etc  
 मालति (वि ?) क्षमिनित्र ND 40  
 91 etc BP 210, SD 81  
 DR 40, 44 etc  
 मालिका is invariably called  
 मालती in ND  
 मायाकापालिकम् (सलापक) SD 105  
 मयाङ्कुरिका (ईहामृग) RS 298  
 मायापुत्रकम् ND 43, 48  
 मारीचवचितकम् BP 217, 223  
 मारीचवध Abh 183, 184 (रागकाव्य)  
 मुद्राराक्षस ND 43, 46 etc, BP  
 DR 41, 75 etc. (calls it  
 इहत्थामूल)  
 मृच्छकटिकम् ND 50, 87 etc,  
 BP 228, 223 etc. SD 67,  
 68 70 DR 29, 45 etc.  
 मेनकाहृषणम् (तोटक) BP 238  
 मेनकाहितम् (रासक) SD 105  
 ययातिविजयम् SD 89  
 यादवाभ्युदय (अस्मदुपज्ञ) ND 63,  
 84 etc  
 यादवोदय (काव्य) SD 15  
 खुविलाम ND 57, 84 etc.  
 गङ्गावलि ND 40, 41 etc BP  
 207 etc SD 64, 65 etc  
 DR 5, 6 etc Abh 25,  
 15 etc  
 राघवविजय (रागकाव्य) Abh. 174  
 183 184 ect.  
 राघवाभ्युदय ND 47 49 ect.  
 SD 96

- रामानुदय ND 95, 56 etc, BP 39 etc Abh. 298  
 229 SD, 65, DR 29, KS 248  
 P 325 वृत्रोद्धरण (डिम) BP 248  
 रामानन्द (भोगदित) BP 235 258 वीरभद्रविजृम्भण (डिम) RS 272,  
 276 etc  
 रामाभिनन्द SD 68 वेणीसहार ND 50, 57 etc BP  
 राधाविप्रलम्भ (रसकाङ्क, मेखलविरचित) 228, 225 etc SD 67, 68,  
 ND 116, Abh 42, 216 70, DR 59 etc Abh 297  
 Abh quotes this author etc  
 as a dramatist 216 शक्तिरामानुजम् (उत्सृष्टिकाङ्क) BP  
 252  
 रैवतमदनिका (गोष्ठी) SD शारदचन्द्रिका BP 252  
 रोहिणीमृगाङ्क (प्रकरण, अस्मदुपज्ञ) ND शर्मिष्ठायायाति (उत्सृष्टिकाङ्क) SD 100  
 P 61, 68 शेगारतिलक (प्रस्थान) BP 262,  
 लटकमेलक (प्रहसन) SD 103 SD 104  
 लीलामधुकर (भाग) SD 98 शृंगारमञ्जरी (भाग) RS 281  
 ननमाला (नाटिका, अस्मदुपज्ञ) ND सत्यहरिश्चन्द्र ND 42, 48  
 171 समुदमन्यन (समवकर) SD 49  
 बालिवध (प्रेक्षणक) BP 263, SD सागरकौमुदी (प्रहसन) BP 247  
 103 सागरलघन BP 205  
 वासवदत्तानाट्यधारा (मृत्पात्र ?) [सुवन्धु s] सीतापहरणम् BP 205  
 Abh 247. सुग्रीवकेलनम् BP 263  
 विक्रमोर्वशीय ND 96, 143, BP 230 मुधाकलश (अस्मदुपज्ञ) ND 147,  
 etc, SD 75, DR 82, 83 148 etc  
 133, Abh 42 etc  
 विद्वत्शालभजिका SD 103  
 विधिविलसित (a drama on नल सैरघ्निका (प्रहसन) BP 247  
 story) ND 78  
 विलक्षणदुर्योधन ND 78 सौगन्धिकाद्वय (व्यायोग) SD 99  
 विलासवती (न अरसाक) SD 140 स्तम्भितरश्मिक (तोटक) BP 238,  
 योनावती (भजिका) BP 262 SD (तोटक) 104  
 वीरचरित ND 39 etc DR 8 स्वप्नवासवदत्तम् (भाषावृत्त) ND 84,  
 BP 239, Abh 87



## APPENDIX II

### TECHNICAL TERMS

**I**N this Chapter I append an alphabetical list of the technical terms occurring in the foregoing pages, in the hope that they will be useful for the proper understanding of the text and render it self-contained

अनुभाव [47] The stage of physical effect in the रस theory See रस

अनुबन्ध [46] Sub-divisions of चरित्र See सध्वङ्ग.

अनन्तर [114] A dancing Scene See P 118, l 11

अभिनय Histrionics Indian dramaturgy requires an actor to be clever in the art of acting or अभिनय अभिनय is fourfold आदिक or कर्तिक, वाचिक, आहार्य and सत्त्विक. आदिक or कर्तिक embraces all the bodily movements involved in acting Various movements of eyes, nose, ears, eyebrows, hands, feet etc, would come under this type of अभिनय Rules regarding the proper and accurate pronunciations of words and the rules regarding the employment of various languages and dialects would come under the head of वाचिकभिनय Appropriate dress and toilet would fall under आहार्यभिनय Interpretations of various moods represented in the plot would fall under the province of सत्त्विकभिनय Theory about these अभिनय is very elaborate

अभिसागिका [125]. DR (2, 44)

कनकादामिसरत्कान्त सखेदामिसरिका

One who, being loved, goes to meet her

lover or makes him come to her is an अभिसारिका

अर्थप्रकृति [47] Sanskrit dramaturgists have prescribed that for the proper accuracy of the plot-development a dramatist should see that at least five points of his plot are quite distinct in his play. These five points or original elements (प्रकृति) of the plot are called अर्थप्रकृति. They are five in number viz बीज, बिन्दु, पताका प्रकरी and कार्य. Before the actual composition of the play a playwright has to fit up the proper skeleton of his plot. First he has to think about the बीज or the point at which the first germ of the plot becomes visible then he has to think about बिन्दु or the expansion of the germ. After the plot expands in this manner, he may sometimes think it necessary to have some episode (पताका) or episodical incident (प्रकरी) for further elaboration of the plot. And finally he has to think about the fitting end, the denouement (कार्य). These five points that are thus fixed up are called the अर्थप्रकृति or the original elements (of the plot), on which the whole plot is developed,

बीज=germ बिन्दु=Expansion of the बीज

पताका=Episode प्रकरी=Episodical incident

कार्य=denouement DR [cf R, 1, 27]

अर्थोद्ग्राह [107] अर्थ+उद्ग्राह Indian music recognises four types of धातु. धातु is defined as प्रबन्धावयव (SR P. 272). Its four types are उद्ग्राह, मेलान, पुन and आमोग. Thus उद्ग्राह is a धातु. It is explained by चतुरस्रङ्गिनाथ thus उद्ग्राहते प्रारभ्यते येन गीत स उद्ग्राह इति प्रबन्धस्य

प्रथमावयवोऽन्वयमङ्ग । (SR, P 272) It is further explained (SR P. 592)

आदौ वाद्यप्रवन्धाना शुद्धकूटादिनिर्मित ।

य सङ्घो वाद्यते प्रादुर्दग्धाद् त महत्तमा ॥ ९७९

and

ते ढे ह्ये तडे तक्कतडे इति वाद्यप्रवन्धपूरणमन्यासादुद्घा प्रवन्ध ।

Thus it is a particular programme of playing upon beating drums to be played in the beginning of a प्रवन्ध.

अवमर्श [121] Pause See सन्धि

अवस्था [46] With reference to the central action of the plot, our theory prescribes five stages These are called अवस्थाः. They are named as आगम्भ, प्रयत्न, प्राप्त्याशा, निश्चिन्ता, and फलान्न [cf DR, 1 28] Beginning of the action is आगम्भ. The effort that the hero has to make for the achievement of his object is प्रयत्न This stage shows that all is not clear sailing for the hero He has to put some effort, as the result of which there might arise some prospect of success, which stage is called प्राप्त्याशा After further effort this prospect turns into practical certainty of achievement, which is therefore termed as निश्चिन्ता, and finally comes the actual attainment of the result i.e. फलान्न Thus these five stages refer to the progress of the plot

आगम्भ=Beginning of action प्रयत्न=Effort for the achievement of the object. प्राप्त्याशा=Hope of success. निश्चिन्ता=Certainty of achievement फलान्न=Attainment of Result.



कन्या [123] One's own legally married wife.

A type of नयिका, which see

कन्या [123] An unmarried girl A type of

नयिका, which see.

कलहान्तरिता [123] A type of नयिका, which see

कुलजा [52] A heroine who is born of a noble

family.

कुटिनी [54] A harlot

कुटिनी [56] A type of इति, which see

कुटिल [121] A kind of कल

ख्यातोद्धत [60] A hero who is reputed in earlier literature or tradition, is called a ख्यात or a प्रख्यात here. When such a hero has impudent manners in the play he is called ख्यातोद्धत

कनिका [123] A courtesan, a type of नयिका, which see

कथा [106] A metre, a type of song See SR P. 319

कार्यं प्राकृते गेन सत्यवचरणाऽयम् ।

त्रिपरी पट्परी गणेशपरे सूरयो जगु ॥

गम [60] A कवि, which see

गमाद [51] An act within an act e.g. in उत्तरगम or सत्यवचरिता When in the body of an act, the principal characters of a play are represented as witnessing a play enacted before their eyes, then occurs गमाद

चतुस्र [119] It is a जति of कल the modern चोताल It is named after the ~~fourth~~ <sup>fourth</sup> ~~of~~ <sup>of</sup> ~~the~~ <sup>the</sup> principal beat : e. four.

चेट [54] A man servant, usually an accomplice of the विट

दक्षिण [121] A hero who is courteous to all his wives

दण्डद्विदण्डक [114] One or two sticks

दिव्यचारी [107] चारी is movement of an actress on the stage, while dancing. There are various types of चारी. This is probably the same as आकाशचारी i.e. the acting interpreting the movement in space

दिव्या [92] A divine heroine like an अप्सरा (e.g. उर्वशी)

दूती [126] A lady-messenger clever in persuading lovers to meet one another

देवी [92] Chief queen.

द्विपद्य [106] A type of metre, a song. See SR P 319 ff

छन्दसा द्विपद्येन स्याद्विपद्य स्वमुक्तिक ।

तालहीन सतालो वा ॥

This is a synonym of the classical metre दोषक. A प्रबन्ध or musical composition in which this metre is employed will also be called द्विपद्य

द्विपरी [122] A metre. A प्रबन्ध composed in that metre. It has कण्ठताल. For its composition see SR P 313-4

धीप्रसाद [52] A type of नायक, which see.

धीरललित [92] A type of नायक, which see

धीरोदात्त [46] A type of नायक, which see

धीरोद्भूत [61] A type of नायक, which see.

ध्रुवा [122] In the actual practice of the performance of a drama, there was a musical programme gone through At the entrance of particular characters in particular scenes, certain songs were sung declaring their entrance These were called ध्रुवाः भग्न as quoted in SR (P 90) describes thus

चानि चैव निवृजानि हृद्भोगविधानत ।  
मुखप्रतिमुखादीनि गीतादान्यैव सर्वदा ॥  
यदात्मकानि तानि स्युर्गुणान्नानि नाटके ।

Comm on SR (P 90) has this note इति प्रवेशार्थमूचनानिस्त्वानन्वयता ज्ञेया ।

NS has one whole अध्याय for this—the 42nd.

ध्वनिश्च [122] Appears to be an item of musical programme.

नटी [46] सूत्रधार's wife

नागत [121] A type of नयिश्च, who is accomplished in all the fine arts.

नाट्यालङ्कार [47] Our dramaturgy recognises 36 decorative elements (अलङ्कारs) to be employed in a drama Just as there are अलङ्कारs in Poetics, there are अलङ्कारs in Dramatics also See NS XVI, which describes these अलङ्कारs

नान्दी [48] Benedictory verse or verses Sanskrit commentators usually quote the following verse for नान्दी

आर्क्षीर्नमस्किद्वारूप खो कश्चार्थमूचकः ।  
नान्दीति कथ्यते

Its main characteristics therefore would be

these (1) It must be benedictory in nature (2) It should suggest the subject-matter of the plot (3) It should have 4, 8 or 12 चरणs.

Practically all our extant dramas begin with a verse which has the above nature and after this first verse the stage-direction ना-यन्ते ततः प्रविशति सूत्रधार occurs. In certain cases this line appears before the verse also, as in भास's plays. As a matter of fact this नादी verse is merely a part of the long programme called पूर्वखण्ड, which had to be gone through before the play actually commenced. BP (P 195-7) prescribes 22 elements of this पूर्वखण्ड, (See P 194, l. 20), out of which नादी is 12th compare BP P 196-7

नादिका [126] half a मुहूर्त See P 126

नायक [46] A hero According to Sanskrit dramaturgy there are many varieties of नायक. These varieties are mainly based on two distinct principles. From the viewpoint of the nature of the hero, he is classified as धीरप्रशान्त, धीरललित, धीरोदात्त, and धीरोद्धत. He is also classified as a lover i. e. with reference to his conduct towards his heroine or heroines. He is then called दक्षिण (courteous), शठ (deceitful) षट् (shameless), or अनुकूल (agreeable). There are some other principles of division also, but we are here concerned with the first principle only. Therefore we shall explain these four varieties धीरप्रशान्त DR, 2, 4

सामान्यगुणयुक्तस्तु धीरशान्तो द्विजादिक

This suggests that he must have all the quali-



ties of a gentleman, and that he must be particularly self-controlled (धीर) and calm (शान्त)

धीरललित DR, 2, 3

निश्चिन्तो धीरललित कलासक्त सुखी मृदु

His qualities are self-control (धीरत्व), light-heartedness (ललितत्व), no anxiety, fondness for arts (कलासक्ति), happiness and delicacy

धीरोदत्त DR, 2, 6

दर्शनान्तरंभूतिर्गो मायालक्षणतया ।

धीरोदत्तस्त्वहंसी चतुष्टयो विद्वन् ॥

Self-controlled, haughty (उदत्त), proud, jealous, deceitful, devoted to magic, egoistic, fickle, irascible and boastful—these are the qualities of the धीरोदत्त hero.

धीरोदात्त, DR. 2, 5

महाशक्तोऽतिगम्भीर सनवानविद्वन् ।

स्थिगे निगूढाङ्गागो धीरोदात्तो ह्यत्र ॥

Self-controlled, exalted उदात्त very sobre, forbearing, not boastful, steady, with subdued ego, firm of purpose (ह्यत्र) and of great excellence (महाशक्त)—these are the qualities of the धीरोदात्त hero

ननिका Heroines are of many types First principle to classify them is their marital relations. A legally married wife is called स्वीया or कटा. Another's married wife, with whom the hero comes in contact is called अन्या or परस्त्री. A courtesan with whom the hero has relations is called a देशद्वी or सामान्या or ननिका These are thus described in DR

स्वाऽन्या साधारणस्त्रीति तद्गुणा नायिका त्रिधा । 2, 24  
 अथस्त्री वन्यकोटा च नान्योढाऽगिरसे क्वचित् ।  
 कन्यानुरागमिच्छात कुर्यादज्ञातिसमाभयम् ॥ 2, 32  
 साधारणस्त्री गणिसा कलाप्रागल्भ्यधौर्त्ययुक् । 2, 23  
 छत्रकाममुखार्थाङ्गस्वतन्त्राहयुपपन्नान् ।  
 रक्तेव रजयेदाढयाभि स्वान्मात्रा विवासयेत् ॥ 2, 34  
 रक्तेव त्वप्रहसने नैषा दिव्यवृषाभये । 2, 35

Thus from the viewpoint of marital relations the heroine may be स्त्रीया : e. one's own wife, or अन्या : e. a वन्या (a maiden) or another's wife (परकीया), or सामान्या : e. a courtesan. 2, 32 makes it clear that परकीया should never figure in the principle. 2, 33-34 count the qualities necessary in a सामान्या.

Again, according to her age and consequent development of her own nature she is classified as मुग्धा (Inexperienced) मध्या (Half-experienced) and प्रगल्भा (Experienced) or प्रौढा. These are thus described in DR

मुग्धा नववयस्य कामा रतौ वामा मृदु क्षुधि । 2, 26  
 मध्योद्यद्यौवनानां मोहान्तमुत्तक्षमा । 2, 27  
 भीरा सोत्प्रासवकोक्त्या मध्या साधुकृतान्मम् ।  
 खेदयेद्युत कोपादभीरा परयाक्षरम् ॥ 2, 28  
 यौवनान्धा स्मरोन्मता प्रगल्भा दयिताङ्गके ।  
 विलीयमानेवानन्दादतारम्भेऽप्यचेतना ॥ 2, 29  
 सावहित्वादरोदास्ते रतौ धीरेतरा मुग्धा ।  
 सतर्ज्य ताडयेन्मध्या मध्या धीरेव त वदेत् ॥ 2, 30  
 द्वेषा ज्येष्ठा वनिष्ठा चेत्यमुग्धा द्वादशोदिता ॥ 2, 31

मुग्धा has the desire of new youth, is bashful in love-sports, and gentle in anger. मध्या has the love of rising youth, and is capable of enjoying

love-sports till fainting 2,28 describes these sub-varieties of मध्या according as she is घीरा, मध्या or अघीरा in her anger, towards her lover 2,29 describes a प्रान्ना or प्रौढा She is blinded by youth, is intoxicated with love, absorbing herself as it were, into the body of her lover through joy, becomes unconscious even at the beginning of love-sports 2,30 describes the three varieties of प्रगल्भा according as she is घीरा, मध्या or अघीरा in her anger towards her lover Again both these मध्या and प्रौढा can be ज्येष्ठा (an elder wife) or कनिष्ठा (younger wife)

Again with reference to her mental condition due to her relations with the hero, a heroine is classified as स्वार्थीनपनिच्छ, वासकसज्जा, विहोत्सृजिता, सज्जिता, कलहान्तरिता, विप्रलम्भा, प्रोषितप्रिया and अभिसारिका

They are thus described in DR.

आशान्तावस्था स्तु स्वार्थीनपनिच्छादिक ॥ 2, 36  
 आशान्तावस्थया ह्येव स्वार्थीनमनुक ॥ 22, 39  
 मुदा वासकसज्जा स्वा मङ्गलमेव प्रिय ॥ 2, 38  
 विरहव्यज्जडा तु विहोत्सृजितान्नता ॥ 2, 31  
 दातेऽन्ध्यासगविहृत सज्जितशोकप्रिया ॥ 2, 40  
 कलहान्तर्गताऽनपनिच्छाऽनुचरति ॥ 2, 41  
 विप्रलम्भोक्तमनसप्राप्ततिविमनिता ॥ 2, 42  
 दुःखान्तरिता तु कथं प्रोषितप्रिया ॥ 2, 43  
 कमानाऽभिसारिका नामध्याऽभिसारिका ॥ 2, 44  
 चिन्तानि धामनेदाप्रवैदन्त्या न्दमूर्तये ।  
 युक्त पदम् । हे वयम् ॥ 2, 15

When the lover is by her side and at her service, she is called स्वार्थीनमनुक One that decorates

herself to meet her lover when he comes, is called वासवसञ्ज्ञा One whose lover tarries in coming to her, inspite of her being non guilty is called विरहेतरुडिता One who has discovered her lover having been disfigured through his love-sports with another woman is खण्डिता One who has repulsed her lover through anger and then suffers remorse is क्लृप्तान्तरिता One who is greatly insulted by her lover, by not turning up at the agreed rendezvous, is called विप्रलब्धा One whose husband has gone abroad on business is called प्रोषितप्रिया One, who being love-lorn goes to meet her lover herself, or makes him to come to her is called अभिसङ्गि 1,45 gives the characteristics of these नायिकाः

निराग or निवारण [ 108 ] An item of musical programme

निर्वहण [ 62 ] सधि, which see

पताका [ 47 ] An अर्धप्रहृति, which see

पत्नीया [ 73 ] Another's wife, A type of नायिका, which see

पाचाली [ 07 ] A kind of रीति

पीठमद [ 07 ] He is called a पताकानायक, He is thus described in DR

पताकानायकास्त्वन्या पीठमर्धे विचक्षण ।

तस्यैवानुचरो भक्त विचिद्रुध तद्गुण ॥ २, १०

He is intelligent, following the नायक, devoted to him and is slightly inferior to the नायक in all his qualities BP describes him thus (P 94)

स पीठमर्धं विश्वास्य कृपितस्त्रीप्रयादक ।

५. पुनर्भू [ 128 ] A heroine who has remarried

प्रकृती [ 47 ] An अर्थप्रकृति, which see

प्रगदनाल [ 114 ] A type of ताल

प्रतिबुद्ध [ 115 ] A सवि, which see

प्रवेशक [ 47 ] प्रवेशक and विश्रम्भक are two introductory scenes. When a dramatist thinks that in the representation of his plot there are some incidents which are not very important from the dramatic viewpoint, but which are such as would be inevitable for connecting the link of the plot, he suggests such incidents by such scenes e.g. in *दुर्गा*, in the first act, राम abandons सीता. The 2nd act proper begins after 12 years with राम going to kill शम्भूक. What happened during these 12 years (e.g. the birth of लव and कुश etc.) is necessary for the proper appreciation of the plot. So the dramatist puts an interlude scene and suggests these incidents. Such scenes are of two types called प्रवेशक and विश्रम्भक. They have following characteristics

प्रवेशक (1) It should not occur in beginning of the first act. It can occur in the beginning of any other act (2) In it all the characters should speak in Prakrit, i.e. all the characters figuring therein are low ones

निष्कम्भक (1) It can occur in the beginning of any act, even the first. (2) It is called *निष्कम्भक* if all the characters thereof are in Sanskrit only and it is called *निष्कम्भक* if some

of the characters speak in Sanskrit and some in Prakrit

प्रस्तावना [ 48 ] Several types of प्रस्तावना are explained earlier (See P 48) Following are the requisites of a प्रस्तावना

(1) It should occur in the beginning of a play (2) In it सूत्रधार should converse with his wife who is called नदी or his attendant who is called परिषार्थक or मालि or विदूषक Or he may enter alone and address the audience (3) In the course of this conversation or speech, the audience should be informed about the name of this play, the name of the author and his history (4) Before closing the प्रस्तावना the सूत्रधार should introduce the character or the incidents of the actual beginning of the first act

All these features are not present in all our extant plays For instance in भट्ट's plays only the सूत्रधार enters and introduces the play and goes away, and (3) Is altogether absent In कालिदास's dramas, except the personal history of the author all other points are seen While in later plays like those of हर्ष and भवभूति all these details are present

प्रौढा [126] A heroine experienced in love-sports  
See नायिका

वन्धनी [63] A harlot

बिन्दु [45] An अर्पप्रवृत्ति, which see

वीन [45] An अर्पप्रवृत्ति which see

भगवत्काल [106] A type of काल भगवत्काले चतुर्विंश नमः

विमानवान् । T SR. I, 444

भारतवाक्य Though nowhere found in theory, almost all our extant dramas append a verse at the end of the play, which is called भारतवाक्य In this verse the hero of the play asks for a blessing from the most revered personality in the play It has been suggested that this verse was recited in honour of भरत who is supposed to be the founder of dramatic science on this earth. Others think that it is a mass prayer by all the actors together, as one of the synonyms for an actor is भरत For this discussion see my paper 'Bhagavadajjukam and Bharatavākya' in IHQ

भारती [46] A वृत्ति, which see

भाव [47] An emotion See रस

भोगिनी [123] A type of नायिका BP describes her thus (P 291)

स्वयं प्रवृत्तमुक्ता प्रवृत्ते भोगदर्शनेति ।

सर्वनीनाममहता भोगनीति लिख्यते ॥

When the love-sports begin, she herself makes the start and she does not tolerate co wives

भक्तपात्री [106] An item of musical programme

मञ्जाल [114] A type of नाट्य । मञ्जालो विमानान्द्विभिर्द्वयचतुर्लुपु SR I, 440

मार्गशी [106] A musical song is called गीत मार्गशी is a type of गीत It is thus defined SR: P 141

गीतका कलायाम्नाया विटम्बिनलय पदम् ।

द्वितीयायां मज्जन्त्य तत्पदम् नारमदुग्धम् ॥

सत्तीयपदे ते च तृतीयस्यां दुते लये ।

इति त्रिराहतपदा मागधी जगदुद्धा ॥

मात्रा [106] Time taken in pronouncing one लघुगणै This can be a type of ताल etc also

मानिनी [92] A type of नायिका One who, feeling insulted by the conduct of her husband is angry with him is called a मानिनी

मारिष [46] An attendant of सूतधार, पारिवर्षिक

मार्गनिवा [106] An item of the musical programme

मुख [47] A मन्त्रि, which see

मुग्धा [92] A heroine inexperienced in love-sports See also नायिका

मुग्जाक्षरवाद्य [114] A beating drum, probably नौबत

वृत्ति [121] Pause in music

रथ्या [106] An item of the musical programme a ताल or the like

रस [47] Theory of रस is peculiar to Indian dramaturgy It has also played a very important part in the science of Poetics To understand this theory let us take an example An actor stages the part of राम, in separation from सीता He wishes to create a tragic feeling in the mind of the audience. The process by which he will achieve his end will pass through the following stages

[1] (a) This feeling originally relies upon राम and सीता If these two are non-existent the feeling



will not arise at all. Therefore these two—hero and heroine—are the sources from which the feeling arises. (b) This feeling, after thus rising, is nourished or excited by the environments like clouds etc. So far the process is mostly unconscious. But soon, these two stages begin to act upon the body and mind of the actor. [2] Due to the physical effect, he has tears in his eyes etc. [3] Due to the mental effect, first there arises a vague feeling of dejection, etc. At this stage the process begins to be conscious, and soon [4] this vague feeling if nourished, takes the form of a permanent mood which we call grief. Here the process becomes fully conscious.

These stages, in the terminology of the theory, are designated as follows:

[1] (a) The hero and the heroine, on whom the feeling originally rests, are called *आलम्बनविभास*. [1] (b) The environment which excites the feeling is called *उद्दिपनविभाव*. Both these form one stage called the *विभाव* stage. [-] The physical effect of the first stage is called *अनुभाव* or *मत्तिव अनुभव*. [3] Its vague transitory mental effect is called *व्यभिचारिभाव*. [4] And the last stage where this transitory mental effects become deep-rooted and take the form of permanent mood is called *स्थायीभाव*. Thus [1] (a) and (b) are *विभास*, [2] is *अनुभाव* and [3] and [4] are *भावस*.

When this process goes on in the mind of

the actor it is subjective only but as the actor goes on interpreting the various stages by his histrionics, speech etc, the audience also goes through the same stages. Here the process becomes objective also. When this process (objective as well as subjective), reaching the last stage of स्थायी भाव, is completed, the minds of the audience experience a subtle pleasure which is termed as रस. रस is the ultimate pleasurable mental condition, which is the outcome of the *whole* of the above process.

अनुभावs are named as स्तम्भ, प्रलय, रोमाञ्च, स्फेद, वैवर्ण्य, वपेष्ट, अश्रु and वैस्वर्य. व्यभिचारीs are named as निर्वेद, ग्लानि, शंका, अमूया, मद, धम, आलस्य, दैन्य, चिन्ता, मोह, स्मृति, धृति, क्रीडा, चपलता, हर्ष, आवेग, जडता, गर्व, विपाद, ओत्सुक्य, निद्रा, विस्मृति, प्राप, वितर्क, स्वप्न, विबोध, अमर्ष, अवहित्य, उग्रता, मति, व्यापि, उन्माद, मरण. स्थायीभावs are the following रति, हास, शोक, क्रोध, उत्साह, भय, जुगुप्सा, विस्मय, and (निर्वेद). And the रसs are शृङ्गार, हास्य, करुण, रौद्र, वीर, भयानक, वीभत्स, अद्भुत and (शान्त).

रेचकs [16] Separate (not simultaneous) movements of hands, feet, waist, and head. A division of कायिकाभिनय.

लय [121] Rhythm created by reciting syllables in proper time-measure.

लस्यार्द्रs [68] लस्य is the gentle dance. Theory recognises ten types or elements of लस्य. BP describes them thus

गेयवद मितपात्र्यमासीनं पुष्पगण्डिका ।

प्रच्छेदक त्रिमूढव सैन्यवात्य द्विमूढकम् ॥

उत्तमोत्तमश्च चतुश्चतस्रस्तुक्चतमेव च ।

लस्य दशविधे येन दक्षनिर्देशन-पथम् ।

वीणादिवाद्ययोगेन सहित यत्र भाव्यते ।  
 ललितं नायिकागीत तन्नेयपदमुच्यते ॥  
 चञ्चत्पुट्यादिना वाक्याभिनयो नायिकाकृतः ।  
 भूमिवारीप्रकारेण स्थितपाठ्य तदुच्यते ॥  
 भूनेत्रपादचलनविलासाभिनयान्वितम् ।  
 योज्यमासीनया पाठ्यमासीन तदुदाहृतम् ॥  
 नानाविधेन वागेन नानानाललान्वितम् ।  
 तस्य प्रयुज्यत यत्र सा ज्ञेया पुष्पगण्डिका ॥  
 अन्यामङ्गमशङ्कित्या नायकस्यातरोपया ।  
 प्रेमच्छेदप्रकटः तस्य प्रच्छेदक विदुः ॥  
 अनिष्टुग्गृहपद सनत्नैरलकृतम् ।  
 नट्य पुरुषमावाड्य त्रिमूढकमुदाहृतम् ॥  
 देशभाषाविशेषेण चलद्वल्यशृङ्खलम् ।  
 तस्य प्रयुच्यते यत्र तत्सैन्यवसुदाहृतम् ॥  
 चारीमिलित्ताभिश्च चित्रायाभिनयान्वितम् ।  
 स्रष्टाभावरसीपेन तस्य यत्तद्विमूढकम् ॥  
 अपज्ञातपार्थस्यं गेयभावविभूषितम् ।  
 तस्य मोक्षदवाक्य यदुत्तमोत्तमक मवेत् ॥  
 कोपसादजनित साधिशेषदाधयम् ।  
 वाक्यं तदुक्तास्त्युक्त द्वयोः प्रभोक्तगन्धकम् ॥

Thus there are ten *tanmāyagā* viz गेयपद = mere song, स्थितपाठ्य = recitation by one who is standing, आसीन = Recitation by one who is seated, पुष्पगण्डिका = Dance in accompaniment with various types of musical instruments, प्रच्छेदक = Song, expressing the breach of love, by one who is a *खण्डिता*, त्रिमूढ = (it is also called त्रिहूढ) Representation, mainly of males, with सनत्तस (i.e. even metres) and gentle words, सैन्य = Dance, with bangles and girdles shaking expressed in देशभाषा, विमुढकम् (it is also called विहूढकम्) = Dance with various types of histrionics,

and clear emotions, by means of various चारिः,  
उत्तमोत्तम = Speech of one who is anxious and who is  
unmindful of persons by his side, and उक्तप्रत्युक्त  
= Fierce conversation caused by anger

These लास्याङ्गs may be employed in a drama  
at several places

SR gives a set of देशीलास्याङ्गs which are worth  
noticing here (P 7934)

चालिश्चालिवड्याथ लटि सूक्मुरोक्ताङ्गम् ।  
धसक्थाङ्गहार स्य दोयारो विहसी मन ॥  
लास्याङ्गानि दशैतानि देशी देशीविदो विदुः ।  
कोमलं सरिलास च मधुर ताललास्ययुक् ॥  
नातिद्रुत नातिमन्द त्र्यसताप्रचुर तथा ।  
पादोरुक्कटिबाहुना यौगपदेन चालनम् ॥  
चालि सा शौच्यसामुह्यप्राया चाश्विहो भवेत् ।  
सुकुमार तिरश्चीनं विलामासिक च यत् ॥  
युगपरकटिबाहुना चालनं सा लटिर्मता ॥  
कर्णयोर्हविषहुल लसलीलावतसयो ।  
विलम्बेनाविलम्बेन सूक्तं तल्लयचालनम् ॥  
विलम्बेनाविलम्बेन कुचयोर्भुजशीर्षयो ।  
ललित चालनं तिर्यक्तञ्च प्रादुहोक्ताङ्गम् ॥  
धमक स्यात्सुललित स्तनाधोनयन लयात् ।  
सताललङ्घितोपेता क्रमारङ्गर्या द्वयोर्नेति ॥  
धनुर्वदङ्गहार स्यादिति नि शङ्कभाषितम् ।  
किञ्चित्तिर्यग्धो मूर्ध्नो गतिरोयारको मन ॥  
न्मिन स्याद्विहसी यस्तु शङ्कारसन्निभम् ।  
अभ्यस्तादय एवातिसूक्ष्मप्रत्यममङ्गिभारम् ॥  
गीतादेरागत स्यायस्तल्लयात्तन्मनो मतम् ।

These are, of course, not meant here

वसन्त [106] A type of ताल See वसन्तो न्मौ ।  
SR D, 451

वर्ग [106] A प्रवर्ग See SR P 305

वर्गताल [104] A type of ताल, वर्गभिन्नो दुर्तो लोप  
SR P 436

वर्धनिका [122] A type of ताल

वाविका [70] A type of अभिनय, which see

वायताल [16] A type of ताल

वासकताल [125] A type of ताल

वासकप्रवा [115] A type of नाविका, which see

विट [52] One of the assistants of the hero  
He is thus defined.

एकविंशो विटश्चान्यो DR, 2, 13

एकविंशो विटस्तस्य क्षणत्रयेषु कौशलम् BP, P 94

His main qualification was his proficiency in  
the art of love Therefore he alone figures in भाग

विश्वक [46] One of the assistants of the hero  
He is thus defined

हस्यकृच्च विश्वक DR, 2, 13

विकृतं हवचोर्वैर्हास्यकृतस्याद्विश्वक ।

पीठमप्यस्य पुरतः प्रयोक्तुं नाविच्छदितु ॥ BP. 44

विभाव [47] See रस

विमर्श [60] Same as अविमर्श, which see

विग्रह [105] A word used for 'a scene'

वीथ्यङ्ग [60] Following are the वीथ्यङ्गs (DR, 3,  
13-26)

उच्चात्यक वलगिते प्रवहन्निगते छत्रम् ।

वाहेत्यधिवले गण्ड अवस्यान्दितनालिके ।

- असत्प्रलापव्याहारमृदवाणि त्रयोदश । 3, 13  
 गूढार्थपदपर्यायमाला प्रभोत्तरस्य वा ।  
 यनान्योन्य समालापो द्वेधोद्धात्यं तदुच्यते ॥ 3, 14  
 यत्रैकत्र समावेशात्कार्यं अन्यत्प्रसाधयेत् ।  
 प्रस्तुतेऽन्यत्र वाऽन्यत्स्यात्तच्चावलगितं द्विधा ॥  
 अमद्भूतं मिथं स्तोत्रं प्रपद्यो हास्यकृन्मतः । 3, 16  
 धृतिसाम्यादनेकार्थयोऽनं त्रिगतं त्विह ।  
 नटादित्रितयालापः पूर्व्वरङ्गे तदिष्यते ॥ 3, 17  
 प्रियाभैरप्रियैर्वाक्यैर्विलोभ्य छलनाच्छलम् । 3, 18  
 विनिवृत्त्याऽस्य वाक्केली द्विविधः प्रत्युक्तितोऽपि वा । 3, 19  
 अन्योन्यवाक्याधिक्योक्तिः स्पर्धयाऽधिबलं भवेत् । 3, 20  
 गण्डः प्रस्तुतसम्बन्धिभिर्नार्यः सहसोदितम् । 3, 21  
 रसोक्तस्यान्यथा व्याख्या यत्रावस्यन्दिता हि तत् । 3, 22  
 सोपहासा निगूढार्था नालिकैः प्रहेलिकाः । 3, 23  
 असम्बद्धकथाप्रायोऽसत्प्रलापो यथोत्तरः 2, 24  
 अन्यार्थमेव व्याहारो हास्यलोभकरः वचः । 2, 25  
 दोषा गुणा गुणा दोषा यत्र स्युर्मृदवः हि तत् । 2, 26

In the body of a regular—full fledged drama these served the purpose of introductory elements DR has a note to that effect

एष मन्यतमेनार्यः पात्रं चाक्षिप्य सूत्रमृत् ।

प्रस्तावनान्ते निर्गच्छेत् ततो वस्तु प्रपद्येत् ॥ 2, 27

सूत्रधार, at the end of the प्रस्तावना should introduce the plot or a character thereof, by means of any one of these elements

1 उद्धात्य=It happens when there is mutual conversation or series of questions and answers, with synonymous words, having ambiguous sense

2 अवलगितं would occur when, due to coincidence, opposite objects are fulfilled or when in the work

in hand, some other end is achieved

For instance उदात्त would occur when राजकुमार on the verge of being united with the King got rebuff from him, and the second would occur, when owing to some coincidence, one gets his इष्ट. In the first अनिष्ट comes up from the प्रसुत, in the second इष्ट follows

3 प्रश्रव is constituted when there is mutual humorous praise, through untrue speech

4 त्रिगुण happens when many interpretations of some speech, are possible on account of resemblance in sound

5 छन occurs when deception takes place through temptation caused by अग्रिम speeches, though they sound like म्रिय ones

6 वाक्छेदलि would happen when some incomplete speech is cut off in the middle significantly, or when there are two or three retorts

7 अधिबल occurs when there is speech which, through rivalry, shows superiority in mutual speech

8 गड when, with regard to the प्रसुत speech, something carrying a different sense is uttered all of a sudden, it is गड ?

9 अवस्यन्दित occurs when a speech full of रस is explained away in some other way

10 नात्किञ्च is a speech like प्रहेलिका in which there is joke and which has some hidden sense

11 असप्रलप is improper prattling, constituted mainly of irrelevant talks

12 व्याहार is that speech which produces humour and temptation hunting at some other sense altogether

13 मृदव is caused when faults are represented as qualities and qualities as faults

वृत्ति [56] वृत्ति is a style They are called वैशिकी, सत्वती आरभटी and भारती They are thus described in DR

तद्व्यापात्मिका वृत्तिश्चतुर्धा तत्र वैशिकी ।  
 गीतदृश्यविलासैर्मृदु शृङ्गारचेष्टितै । 2, 77  
 नर्मगतस्फूर्जतस्फोटतद्भैरवतुरङ्गिका । 2, 78  
 वैराग्यकीडित नर्म प्रियोऽच्छन्दनात्मकम् ।  
 हास्येनैव सशृङ्गारभयेन विहित त्रिधा ।  
 आत्मोपश्लेषभोगमानै शृङ्गार्यपि त्रिधा ।  
 शुद्धभङ्गभय द्वेधा त्रेधा वाग्वेशचेष्टितै ॥  
 सर्वं सहास्यमित्येव नर्माष्टादशोदितम् । 2, 79  
 नर्मस्फूर्ज सुखारम्भो भयान्तो नवसङ्गमे । 2, 80  
 नर्मस्फोटस्तु भयान्तो सूचितोऽल्परसो लयै । 2, 81  
 छन्ननेत्रप्रतीचातो नर्मगर्भोऽर्थहेतवे ।  
 अङ्गे सहास्यनिर्हास्यैरेभिरेपात्र वैशिकी ॥ 2, 82  
 विशोका सत्वती सत्वशौर्यत्यागदयार्जरी ।  
 सलापोत्थापकावस्था सधात्य परिवर्तक ॥ 2, 83  
 संलापको गभीरोक्तिर्नानाभावरसा मिथा । 2, 84  
 उत्थापकस्तु यत्रादौ युद्धायोत्थापयेत्परम् । 2, 85  
 मन्त्रार्थदेवशक्त्यादे साधात्य सप्तभदनम् । 2, 86  
 प्ररब्धोत्थानकार्यान्त्यकरणात्परिवर्तक । 2, 87  
 अभिरूढधनुर्धेय कालत्वारभटी पुन ।  
 मायेन्द्रजालसमामकोपोद्धान्तादिचेष्टितै ॥  
 सक्षिप्तिका स्यात्संकेतो वस्तुधानावधाने । 2, 88  
 सक्षिप्तवस्तुरचना सक्षिप्ति सित्ययोगत ।



एवनेतृनिवृत्त्याऽन्ये नेत्रन्तरपरिग्रहम् ॥ 2, 89  
 सपेक्षस्तु घनाघात कृद्दस्यारोह्यो । 2, 90  
 मायाशुभारिण वन्दु वस्तुभाषननिश्चये । 2, 91,  
 अवयान्तु निष्कामप्रवेशप्रामविद्रव्ये । 2 92  
 एमिज्जैवमुधैर 2, 93  
 भारती ससृजप्रयो वाग्व्यापारो नटाश्रय ।  
 नैदै प्रगेचनायुक्तैर्वीर्यप्रहसनासुतै । 3, 5  
 उन्मुखीकरा तत्र प्रशसान प्रोक्ता । 3, 6

BP has the following for भारती इति P 228

या वाक्प्रधाना पुष्पयोज्या स्त्रीविजिता ससृजपाप्रयुक्ता ।  
 स्वन्मधेयैर्भगैः प्रयोज्या सा भारती नान भवेत् इति ॥

Thus there are four इतिस वैशिष्टी is soft, सारवती is grand, भारवती terrible and भारती is eloquent

देशज्ञी [52] A courtesan.

व्यभिचारी [47] stage of transitory mental effect in the रस theory See रस

मानवती [58] A इति, which see

सत्त्विक [17] Same as अनुभाव See रस Also a type of अभिनय, which see.

सामान्या [73] A courtesan See also नरिद्रा

सुताल [119] A kind of ताल

सूत्रधार [16] The manager of a dramatic company

संधि [47] Like the अर्थप्रवृत्तिस and अवस्थास, संधिस too are essential for the plot-structure of a play In the plot of a play, sometimes we get well-defined junctures These are called संधिस Following is

the scheme as given in DR

- अन्तरैकार्थसम्बन्ध संधिरेकान्वये सति । 1, 35  
 मुखप्रतिमुखे गर्भं सावमर्शोपसहृति । 1, 36  
 मुग्न वीजसमुत्पत्तिर्नानार्थरससम्भवा ।  
 अङ्गानि द्वादशैतस्य बीजारम्भसमन्वयात् । 1, 37  
 लक्ष्यालक्ष्यतयोद्भेदस्तस्य प्रतिमुख भवेत् ।  
 बिन्दुप्रयत्नानुगमादङ्गान्यस्य त्रयोदश ॥ 1, 51  
 गर्भस्तु दृष्टतस्य बीजस्यान्वेषणं मुहुः ।  
 द्वादशाङ्गं पताका स्यात् वा स्यात्प्राप्तिसम्भवा ।  
 मोधेनावमर्शेयत्र व्यसनाद्वा विलोभनात् ।  
 गर्भनिर्भिन्नरीजार्थं सोऽवमर्शोऽङ्गमप्रदः ॥ 1, 81,  
 बीजवन्तो मुखचर्मा निप्रकीर्णा यथायवम् ।  
 ऐकार्थमुपनीयन्ते यत्र निर्बहणं हि तत् ॥ 1, 96

Five acts are मुग्न प्रतिमुख, गर्भ, अवमर्श and निर्बहण  
 In मुख, we begin with the commencement of बीज and go through different developments of बीज till we reach बिन्दु मुख has 12 sub-divisions (संध्यगाः) Thus in the body of मुख itself, the first utterance which would point to the seed is उपश्लेष, its extension is परिवार, etc In प्रतिमुख, the love that is produced as the seed, is sometimes visible and sometimes invisible but through the effort of the hero, the plot is developing to gain its end It has 13 sub divisions, which are based on बिन्दु and त्रयत्न and therefore, there must be some progress made in the बीज Thus throughout these 13 divisions we have effects to develop that love which sprang up in the first stages-मुग्न-बीज and आरम्भ In प्रतिमुख the plot should progress without obstacles In गर्भ the following points should be present

(1) चीज, that is made manifest should be lost sight of

(2) There must be renewed search after it

(3) There may or may not be पताहा

(4) There must be अस्वात्ता,

Thus गर्भे differs from मुग and प्रतिमुग in as much as these two were based on corresponding two elements of अस्वात्ता and अंशदृष्टि, while गर्भे is based on अस्वात्ता, an element of अस्वात्ता only पताहा an element of अंशदृष्टि may or may not be present here It has 12 sub-divisions

After the चीज is lost sight of in गर्भे 1. 0 after the action of the plot is hampered in गर्भे, one has to think properly about the means of regaining it This thinking is called अमर्श Thus upto गर्भे, there is a continuous progression of action and the plot is at its highest in गर्भे Then comes some pause or thinking This is अमर्श This has 13 sub-divisions निर्दण, the last अवि, should harmonise all the threads of मुग, चीज etc, scattered over throughout the drama It is the same as कार्य or फलागम It has 14 sub-divisions

It will be thus seen that अस्वात्ता, अंशदृष्टि and अवि have certain parallel elements Thus चीज-आगम-मुग, विदु-प्रयत्न-प्रतिमुग, पताहा (not always)-गण्यज्ञा गर्भे, कार्य फलागम-निर्दण.

संयत्त Every अवि has several संयत्त In all they make 61. Accompanying table shows them Following six are said to be the motives of these संयत्त. Arrangement of the desired plot, concealment of that which should be concealed, manifestation of proper subjects, attachment, wonder caused by the representation and no unnecessary condensation of the narrative

रतीया [123] A type of नविका, which see,

सुश्रुति [54] A type of song

यस्तु

अयं प्रकृतिः

अवस्थाः

स्थितिः

वीर्य, विन्दु, पताका, भक्तरी, वर्य

आरम्भ, प्रयत्न, प्राप्ति, विफलता, फलानाम्

मुख

प्रतिमुख

अवधारी

उपसंहारि OR निर्वहण

उपलक्ष्य, परिकर, विलास, परिमर्ष, विधत्, परिन्यास, विलोभन क्षम, नर्म, नम्रैवति, युक्ति, प्राप्ति, प्रयत्न, निरोध, पर्व-समाधान, विधान, पासनम्, वज्र, पुष्प, परिभाषा, उद्देश, उपन्यास, वर्णमाला, भेद, करण

अभिप्रेत, मार्ग, अभिप्रेत, सकेत, कथन, उपलक्ष्य, कथन, सप्रति, अनुमान, शिष्ट, अविज्ञान, उद्देश, अविज्ञान, सप्रति, आशय, अविज्ञान

सन्धि, विशेष, प्रथम निर्णय, परिभाषण, प्रसाद, आनन्द, समर्थ, कृति, भाषण, उपगृह्य, पर्वभाग, उपसंहार, प्रसक्ति

12

13

12

13

14-64

INDEX I  
Sanskrit (Names and Subjects)

INDEX II  
English (Names and Subjects)



# INDEX I

## Sanskrit (Names and Subjects)

- अङ्क 39, see उत्पत्तिश्चाङ्क  
 अभिज्ञानशाकुन्तल 29, 42  
 अवन्तीसुन्दरीकथा 41  
 आदिमग्न 8n  
 आश्वमेधचूडामणि 30  
 ईदानीं 39, def of 59, nature of 58-9, 81  
 उत्तररामचरित 30  
 उत्पत्तिश्चाङ्क 39, def of 61, nature of 61 ff, 79  
 उन्नतपराध 30, 134  
 उपरूपक different from रूपक 23-4, its actual use and sense 103-4, diff. between उप and नृत्य types 102, 132 ff see also नृत्य types  
 उभयभित्तारिका 3n, 29, 35n, its technique 71, 149, 155 its date 155n  
 उर्वशीविप्रलम्भ 49  
 उल्लोम्बक (a नृत्य type) its nature 121  
 ऋग्वेद (also RV) 6, 6n  
 कर्मलिनीकल्हस 30  
 कर्णकुन्दरी 30  
 कर्तृवृत्ति technique of 72  
 कल्पवृक्ष (a नृत्य type) nature of, 124  
 क मन्त्र 35  
 कालिदास 3, on नृत्य 9n  
 कथन (in the sense of a play) 35,  
 कान्य (a नृत्य type) nature of 122  
 कुसुमप्रकरण 43  
 कुन्दमाला 30  
 कुन्दरावण 48  
 कोहल 48, on वीथी 73  
 कौमुदी (a Gujarati monthly) 5n  
 कौमुदीमहोत्सव 29  
 कौमुदीमित्रानन्द 30  
 गेयरूपक 134  
 गोष्ठी (a नृत्य type) nature of 124, 140-1  
 गौरीगृह 48  
 घनदत्त 59  
 घटक (a dramaturgist) 92  
 चारु 29  
 चित्रकला 48  
 हनूमत् (a play) 95, 96  
 दिन 39, def of 58, nature of 48-9, 81  
 होम्बिका (a नृत्य type) nature of 109-110

होम्बी (a नृत्य type) nature of 108, 109-110

ताण्डव 151

सोटक (also त्रोटक) nature of 93

त्रोटक (also सोटक) nature of 93

पेरागाथा 27

दंडरासक 143

दण्डी 41

दाण्डीआरास 143

दानकेलीकौमुदी 134

दामकप्रदसन technique of 64

दुर्मलिका (a नृत्य type) nature of 125, 131-2

दुर्मलिका (a नृत्य type) nature of 125

देवीचन्द्रगुप्त 53

दोहिणी 48

धूर्तविदसवाद 30 technique of 71, 149, 157

नट evolution of its sense 5 12

नन्दिमाली (a variety of भाण-नृत्य type) 106

नर्तक (a नृत्य type) nature of 118, 120

नवप्रहचरित 95

नाट्य use of in plays 29-30

नाटक (the term) use of in generic sense 42-3

नाटक (a रूपक type) 32, def of 44, technique of 44, 51, 83

नाटवाटप्रहसन 65

नाटिका nature of 91

नाटी 39, nature of 91

नाट्य 4-22, def of 5n, 32

नाट्यवारा 41

नाट्यरासक (a नृत्य type) nature of 112, 115-7

नृत् 5-12

नृत्य 4-12, sense of 32

नृत्य (the term,) 4-22, 32

नृत्य types, number of 99-101, remarks on the no of 101-4 non-mention of in NS 101, evolution of 131-144, musical nature of 132, their intrerrelations and relations with रूपक 134 ff, all the types reduced to भाण and भाणिका 136 ff

पञ्चरात्र 29, 57

पद्मप्राप्तकम् 43, technique of 70, 149, date of 156n, 157, 163

पाञ्चरूपक 134

पाणिनि 5n, 8

पादताडितकम् technique of 72, 140, 157, 163n

पाणिनिरूपकम् 430

पञ्चरात्रपरिणय 130, 31



- पारिजातनक्षत्री 30  
 पारिजातलता (a वृत्त type) nature of 123  
 पुण्ड्रितम् 52  
 पूर्ण a type of नाटक acc to सुबन्धु 48 ff  
 प्रकरण use of the terms in generic sense 43, its nature 51-55, 83  
 प्रकरणिक nature of 92  
 प्रकरणिकी nature of 92  
 प्रतिभा 29  
 प्रतिज्ञा 29, 43  
 प्रवेशचन्द्रोदय 95  
 प्रस्थानक (a वृत्त type) its nature 117, 132-3  
 प्रसन्नराग 30  
 प्रशान्त a type of नाटक acc to सुबन्धु 48 ff  
 प्रहसन 39, its divisions and nature 62-3, 79  
 प्रेक्षक (a वृत्त type) its nature 119, 120  
 प्रेक्षा (a term meaning drama) 35  
 प्रेरण (a वृत्त type) 127  
 प्रेक्षा (a वृत्त type) 121  
 बालरामायण 48  
 भगवद्गुणम् 29, 35n, on number of स्तव 41, 42, 64, its technique 67, 84  
 भट्टनन्द 31  
 भट्टलोक 21, 91  
 भरतार्णव 143  
 भवभूति 30  
 भाग (स्वरूप) 39, its nature 69, 78, distinguished from प्रहसन 81-2, its plot-structure analysed 152-ff, humour in 163n, earliest use of the word 167n  
 भाग (a वृत्त type) its nature 105-7, 109-110, 136 ff  
 भागिका 140 its nature 107, 109-110, 140-1  
 भाव 3  
 भास्वर (a type of नाटक acc. to सुबन्धु) 48 ff  
 भोज 73  
 भण्डकृत्या (a वृत्त type) 127  
 भण्डिका (a वृत्त type) 125  
 भण्डविलस 30, technique of 67  
 भण्ड 29  
 भण्डिका (a वृत्त type) 127  
 भण्ड नाटक 50, 95  
 भाल्लोनाथ 54  
 भाल्लोनाथमित्र 9, on नाट्य 10, 29  
 सुकुन्दानन्द 72, 149, 154  
 मुराराम 30  
 मूलदेव (a famous विट) 53  
 मृच्छटिक 146n  
 ययातिदेवयानीचरित 96

- रतिमन्मथ 30  
 रसकौमुदी 143  
 रसपदन 72, 154  
 रामचन्द्र 5n, 159n  
 रामाजीड (a दृश्य type) 127  
 रामानन्द (a drama) 48  
 रास (a dance form) its relation with रागक 14, 3, its der 143  
 रासक its nature 110, 115-7, 104-1, its relation with राग 141 ff, its relation with लास्य 142-4  
 रूप its use in play 29-30  
 रूप 27  
 रूपर different from उपरूपक 24, der of the terms 27, its use in plays 30-31, 32, its types 39-75, number of 39-41, remarks on the no of 41-44, evolution of 77, 88, different रस in 87n  
 लक्ष्मेश्वर technique of 66  
 ललित (a type of नाटक acc to सुगन्धु, 48ff  
 लस्य its relation to राग 143-1  
 ललितराज 30  
 लक्ष्मि 3n etc  
 लक्ष्मी (a type of रूपक) 11  
 लक्ष्मिदत्तानाथधारा 41  
 विक्रमोर्वशीय 29  
 विदग्धमाधव 30  
 विलासिनी (a दृश्य type) 127  
 वीथी 39, def of 72, its nature 60, 80  
 वेणीसहस्र 30  
 व्यायाम (same as व्यययोग) 60  
 शारदातनय 17, 22  
 शिल्प (a दृश्य type) 123  
 शूद्र 48, 163  
 शृंगारतिलक 72, 153  
 शृंगारभूषण 72, 153  
 शृंगारसर्वस्व 72, 151  
 शकुन्तला on hero in वीथी 73, 91  
 श्रीमदितम् (a दृश्य type) 124  
 पिद्गाक (a दृश्य type) 121, 125  
 मद्रक nature of 93  
 समग्र (a type of नाटक acc to सुगन्धु) 41 ff  
 समवहार 59, def of 55, 58, remarks on 57, 51  
 ममात्र (a term meaning drama) 85  
 सत्यहरिश्चन्द्र 30  
 सत्य 41  
 सत्पदक (a दृश्य type) 123, 131 2  
 सुगन्धु (the dramatist) 11  
 सुगन्धु (the dramaturgist) on the divisions of नटक 18-50  
 सुमदाहरण 131

सर्गिक (a term meaning drama)	हर्ष (the playwright) 30
35	हर्षा its nature 121, 140-1
स्वभावसूत्र 29, 48	हास्याव technique of 67
हर्ष (the dramaturgist) 21	हेमचन्द्र 23, 159n

## INDEX II

*English (Names and Subjects)*

- Abh on divisions of दृश्य 16,  
on दृश्य etc 19-20 24, 31,  
on रस in different रस 87n,  
on नटिका 91, on दृश्य types  
100, 104, on भाग (दृश्य type)  
105, on मण्डि 107, on डोन्नी  
108, on प्रस्थानक 112, on विद्वत्  
125, on गन कीड and प्रेष 127,  
165n
- ABORI 8n, 29n
- AP on the species of रसक  
40, 43, on दृश्य types 99
- Atomic theory* 155n
- Bechardas (Pandit) 6n
- BP on दृश्य etc 12-17, on  
रस 21, on the species of  
रस 40, 41, 44, on नटक 48ff,  
on प्रकरण 54, on सनवकर 56, 59,  
on व्याख्यान 61, on उद्घोषिका 62,  
on भाग 70, on वीदी 73, on  
नटिका 92, on तोटक 93, on सङ्ग  
93, on the no of दृश्य types  
100, on भाग (a दृश्य type) 105,  
on मण्डि 107, on डोन्नी 108,  
on रसक 111, on नाट्यगमक 112-  
5, on प्रस्थानक 117, on नर्तनक  
118-9f on प्रेक्षाक 119, on  
हर्षा 121, on उद्घोषकम् 121,  
on कव्य 122, on परिजानल्ला  
on शिल्पक 123, on सङ्ग 123,  
on गोष्ठी 124, on कल्पवृक्ष 124,  
on श्रीगदितम् 125, on दुर्मण्डिका  
125, on मण्डि or मण्डिकृता 127,
- De S K (Dr) 27, 95
- Derivative types (of drama),  
their nature 91-94, remarks  
on 94-5
- Dhruva K H (Prof) 41,  
48n, 77n,
- DR 9, 12, 35, on the spe-  
cies of रसक 40, on नटक 46-7,  
on प्रकरण 52, on सनवकर 56,

on डिम 58, on ईहामृग 59, on  
व्यायोग 60, on उत्सृष्टिकाङ्क 61,  
ग्रहसन 63, on भाण 69, on वीथी  
72-3, on नाटिका 92, on नृत्य  
types 99, 104

*History of Indian Literature*  
5n

IHQ 27n, 156n, 158n

*Indian Philosophy* 155n

Irregular types (of drama)  
95-6

Kavi R (Mr) 65

Keith A B (Dr) 27, 43, 57,  
95, 99, 135n, 155n, 159n

Konow Sten 27

KS 23, on the species of  
रूपक 40, 42, on नाटक 47, on  
समवहार 56, on ईहामृग 59, on  
व्यायोग 61, on ग्रहसन 63, on  
भाण 69, on वीथी 73, on नृत्य  
types 100, 104, on दुर्मतिना  
126

Majmudar M R (Mr) 144  
*Mahindapanha* 27

MMC on नृत्य नृत्य and नाटक  
11-17 41

MTR on नाटक 46

ND 5n, on the species of  
रूपक 40, 42, on the def of  
नाटक 14, on नाटक 18, on प्रकरण

52, on समवहार 56, on ईहामृग  
60, on उत्सृष्टिकाङ्क 62, on  
ग्रहसन 63, on भाण 69, on  
वीथी 73, on नाटिका 92, on  
प्रकरणिका 92, on सङ्क 94, on  
the no of नृत्य types 100,  
104, on भाण (नृत्य type) 106,  
on भाणिका 107, on सङ्क 112  
on ग्रहसन 118 on नर्तनक 118-  
9, on प्रेक्षणक 120, on हनीशक  
127, on काव्य 122, on गोष्टी  
112, 150n

Nrtya-types see नृत्य types

NS 3, 10n, on नृत्य 18, use  
of रूप in 28, 31, 35n, on the  
species of रूपक 39, on नाटक  
41-6, on प्रकरण 51-2, on समवहार  
55, on डिम 58, on ईहामृग 59,  
on व्यायोग 60, on उत्सृष्टिकाङ्क 61,  
on ग्रहसन 62, on भाण 69, on  
वीथी 73, on नाटिका 91, on नृत्य  
types 99

NSD 8, 10, on सामाजीक  
नाटक 128, 141

PR on नृत्य etc, 12-17, on  
the (species of) रूपक 41

Radhakrishnan S (Dr) 155n

PR on the species of रूपक  
40, 41 on प्रकरण 51, on समवहार  
57 on ग्रहसन 63

- San D 27n, 95, 99, 135n, 159n,
- Sanskrit Drama, its origin 147ff characteristics of the first drama 164, periods of growth of 165
- Sastri R (Mr) 101
- SD on the species of रूपक 41, on नाटक 50, on संनवका 56, on देशाद्या 60, on प्रहसन 63, on प्रहसन 93, on तोटक 93, on गटक 24, on the no of रूपक types 11, on भाषा 107, on मसक 112, on नटयसक 115, on ग्रमानक 118, on प्रेक्षाक 120, on हलीसक 121, on उद्योपक 122, on सप्त 123, on शिल्पक 124, on गोष्ठी 124, on दुर्मन्त्रिका 126, on विलासिका 127, 135n
- SDR 7n, 8, 12
- SP on प्रकरा 54, on रूपक types 100, on प्रज्ञाक 120, on उद्योपक 122, on गोष्ठी 124, on श्रीगदिनम् 125, on दुर्मन्त्रिका 126, on मन्त्रिका or मन्त्रिक 127
- SR on रूपक etc, 12-17
- Thakore B K (Prof) 10n
- Weber 5

# ERRATA

Page	Correct	Page	Correct
13, 12	०इशयैव	113, 7	चतुभि०
17, Last BP		13	बद्धा
21, 14	add, P 208	16	०सयुक्तै
21, 16	०हैस्ते	17	०शुक्कवर्गप्रयोग०
29, 21	न द	116, 20	264
31, 10	रूप	117, 15	form
13	seems	119, last	त्रिपुरमर्दनम्
17	रूप, रूप	128, throughout	NSD
35, 17	Corroborate	133, last	नाय्य, instead of नृप
36, 5	gaining	134, 18	उपरूपः
56, 21	erotic	152, 3	variants
58, last	विमर्श	167, 1	later
59, 2	वीरभद्र०	179, 13	hero
62, 25	सदुक्त	27	modern
28	NS,	181, 27	श्लोक
64, 2	भगवदञ्जुक्तम्	183, 14	धीरोद्धत
78, 13	difficulty	184, 23	८विन्द्वन्त
91, 9	160	207, 1, 8	term
109, 20	add no	208, 2, 6	देणीपहार
112, 19	add (BP P 263 L 23 to P 265 L 7)		
23	भेदनाद्		
25	सुहृत्परोद्धतैर्गौर्वायिनाभिर्विलक्षणा		